

Big Time Celebrity

Gu Long

Big Time Celebrity

(大人物 / Dà Rén Wù)

By Gu Long

**Translated by Tiger Wong, KangXi, Paul, and
Fastclock**

Chapter 1: The Red Silk Handkerchief

The young man held a sabre in his hand, the silk handkerchief on the handle fluttered in the wind.

A red piece of silk, red like the recent sunrise.

The sabre's point flashed brightly beneath the blazing sun. The young man perspired, the moisture from the sweat penetrated his dark, satin clothes.

He was already surrounded. There were only four people surrounding him, but he knew just how fearsome these four people were. He wanted to drop his sabre several times, abandoning all resistance.

But he did not have this luxury.

Because he could not tarnish the red silk handkerchief attached to his sabre, he could not tarnish the person whom this handkerchief symbolized.

To attach this red handkerchief is to express that you are determined to struggle to the bitter end, not showing weakness to others even onto death!

This red silk seemed to bestow some kind of unwavering courage!

He brandished his sabre, shouted wildly, and charged.

The red silk danced, even more captivating than the flash of the sabre.

He immediately heard the sound of the sabre cutting into the skull of his opponent.

The man fell down, eyeballs protruding, staring at the fresh flowing blood.

He did not die under this sabre, nor did he die under this young man's hand.

It was the red silk that took his life, because from the start, his confidence had already been shattered by the indomitable courage that this red silk handkerchief represented!

The young girl leaned on the door panel, her eyes were more gentle than the soft light of the stars in the sky.

She held on to his hand, she couldn't bear to let him leave.

The handkerchief tied to his wrist drifted lightly in the evening breeze.

A red silk handkerchief, red like a lover's heart.

The night was deep. He should have left long ago.

He did not leave.

Because he could not tarnish the red silk attached to his wrist. As long as you put on this handkerchief, you must not allow any young girl to be disappointed.

Not only did this red handkerchief represent courage, it also symbolizes passion. A fiery kind of passion.

He finally came over and whispered into her ear.

Their sweet whispers were more stirring than the spring breeze.

But her eyes were still fixated on the handkerchief that was tied to his wrist.

His passion vanished, because he suddenly realized that what she loved was not his person, but this piece of red silk that was on his wrist.

When she was holding on to his hand, what she was thinking of in her heart was not him, but the person this red silk handkerchief represented.

Who knew how many other young girls' hearts and dreams contained this person.

This person was called Qin Ge.

He bathed, drew back his topknot, trimmed his fingernails nice and neatly, and then put on the newly tailored black satin shirt. He carefully tied the red silk handkerchief to his waist.

He did not like wearing black clothes, nor did he like red handkerchiefs.

However, he couldn't avoid doing this.

Because if he didn't do this, it would show that he did not have courage, that he did not have passion.

Ever since the Battle of Tiger Hill, ChiangNan's dye merchants had no choice but to dye all kinds of silk handkerchiefs red, because all the young men wanted to tie a piece of red silk on their bodies.

If a young man did not carry red silk on his body, he simply didn't dare to step outside his door.

Some people who were no longer young, but wanted to act young, would also wear a piece of red silk to show that they were not too old, that they didn't get left behind.

Dashing young men would tie the handkerchief to their wrists or waists. Courageous young men would tie the handkerchief to their sabres or swords. The young men in the market would tie the handkerchief around their heads.

But never has anyone tied it around their necks.

No one dared!

Because Qin Ge tied a red silk handkerchief around his neck.

If you dared to tie it around your neck, even if Qin Ge was not around, other people would cut off the handkerchief. Along with your neck!

You can study him, idolize him, but can never offend him in the slightest way. If he enjoyed admiring the moonlight alone on top of a bridge, you can only admire it from underneath the bridge.

Qin Ge was Qin Ge, there will never be a second. Never have, never will!

Since the Battle of Tiger Hill, Qin Ge has become a hero in the hearts of every young man in ChiangNan, and an idol in the hearts of every young girl.

Qin Ge is obviously a big time celebrity in Tian SiSi's heart

Chapter 2: One Hundred and Eight Sabres

Tian SiSi reclined on the golden silk-carpeted, bamboo couch. The thick shades by the window were drawn tight.

The breeze carried a hint of lotus fragrance. She held a jade bowl, in the bowl was some chilled lotus seed soup.

Someone rode over a hundred li on a fast horse to some foreign lands to retrieve the ice. Although Jin Xiu Manor also stored a supply of ice, Tian SiSi preferred the ice from that faraway place.

For no other reason than that she thought the exotic ice seemed a bit colder.

Even if she thought the moon was square, nobody would argue with her.

As long as Ms. Tian was happy, no matter what she did, no one would dare to oppose her.

This wasn't merely because she was the mighty marquis, "Second Master Tian" - Tian BaiShi's only daughter. It was also because she was truly a sweet person. Not only was her person sweet, her words were sweet, and her laughter was even sweeter. Such that no one wished to refuse any of her requests.

Everybody's only regret was that they didn't get many opportunities to see this sweet person.

Only during the annual lantern festival, when Second Master Tian released the flower lanterns, would she briefly

show herself. During the rest of the year she would hide in her quarters and nobody can catch a glimpse of her.

His nickname being “The High Class of ZhongYuan”, Second Master Tian was obviously not a short-tempered, petty person. He wouldn’t raise an eyebrow if he squandered away all his riches, but he would not allow anybody an opportunity to become intimate with his daughter.

His daughter was a hundred thousand times more valuable than all the treasure in the world combined.

The lotus seed soup was no longer cold. Tian SiSi only took a small sip before handing it over to her servant Tian Xin.

Tian Xin was not just her handmaiden, she was also her best friend, her only friend.

If she didn’t have Tian Xin, she couldn’t imagine how lonely it’d be.

Right now Tian Xin was sitting on a small bench in front of Tian SiSi with her head lowered, embroidering. The liquid in the golden stove gradually started to cool down, the wind blew the bamboo leaves, and a young girl fantasized and spoke wistfully to herself.

Tian SiSi suddenly snatched the embroidery needle away from her maidservant’s hand, and tenderly chided her: “Can’t you stop it with the sewing? Is someone waiting for you to finish embroidering that pillow to use for a wedding dowry?”

Tian Xin laughed, and lightly tapped her waist with her pale little hands: “If not embroidering, then what else is there to do?”

Tian SiSi said: "Chat with me."

Tian Xin pouted her lips: "We talk all the time, what is there left to chat about?"

Tian SiSi's eyes danced: "Tell me a story."

Jin Xiu Manor entertained guests all year round. These guests come from all over. Tian Xin would hear all kinds of fearsome and interesting stories from them, and then relay them to her lady.

Tian Xin said: "These past few days, all the guests have been boring dummies who wouldn't even tell any stories. Every day, they only look forward to sucking up the wine, as if afraid that drinking a bit less would mean they weren't cool enough."

Tian SiSi's eyes shone, but she intentionally acted bored and casually said: "Then you can tell me the story of the Battle of Tiger Hill once more."

Tian Xin: "I've forgotten that story."

Tian SiSi: "Forgotten? You've told that story seven or eight times, how can you forget all of a sudden?"

Tian Xin pouted her lips even more, and with a stern expression on her face said: "Since I've already told that story seven or eight times, you also cannot forget it. Since you haven't forgotten it, why do you need to hear it again?"

Tian SiSi blushed and jumped up as if to use the needle to sew up this spoiled servant girl's lips.

Tian Xin giggled, drew back and gasped: "Ok Miss, if you want to listen I will tell it. As long as your Ladyship is happy,

it doesn't matter if I tell it a hundred times."

Only then did Tian SiSi spare her. She glared at her and said: "Speak quickly, and be mindful that I don't sew up your little lips."

Tian Xin sat up straight on the bench, cleared her throat on purpose several times, and then slowly started speaking: "The Battle of Tiger Hill was the young knight Qin Ge's claim to fame. For the past seven years, no other battle in the martial society has been more stirring, and no other battle has caused more blood to be shed than this one."

She has certainly told this story many times. Like a teacher reciting a familiar fable, even if she were dozing off she wouldn't miss a word.

But Tian SiSi's eyes shone even more brightly, as if this was the very first time she has heard the story.

Tian Xin said: "That day was May 5th, the Dragon Boat Festival. Every year on that day, the Seven Tigers of ChiangNan would gather on top of Tiger Hill. These Seven Tigers were not nice tigers. Not only would they eat people, they wouldn't even bother to spit out the bones."

Tian SiSi: "If this is so, then other people must be very afraid of them?"

Tian Xin: "Of course they're afraid, frightened to the extreme. Therefore even though everybody wanted to act the part of the tiger-fighting hero, and knew that they would all meet on Tiger Hill on this date, nobody dared to go look for them. Until five years ago, on that day....."

Tian SiSi: "What happened that day?"

She was obviously already familiar with this story, and knew the right moment to interject with a question to let

Tian Xin move the story along.

Tian Xin said: “That day when the Seven Tigers went up the hill, they encountered a very beautiful young lady along the way. The Seven Tigers seeing a beautiful young lady were like hungry dogs eyeing a meaty bone. Without hesitation, they kidnapped the girl and carried her up the mountain.”

Tian SiSi: “Did they know who this young lady was?”

Tian Xin: “At the time, of course they didn’t know that this young girl was Qin Ge’s sweetheart, but even if they did know, they still wouldn’t be afraid. They didn’t fear anyone, because nobody had ever dared to bother them.”

Tian SiSi: “But this time they would encounter one who would.”

Tian Xin: “At that time, Qin Ge wasn’t famous yet. Nobody imagined that he had that much guts. When he said that he was going up the mountain to fight the Tigers, everyone thought that he was just boasting. Who knew he really went.”

Tian SiSi: “He went alone?”

Tian Xin: “Of course he did. He singlehandedly rode a horse up Tiger Hill and found those Seven Tigers. Even though he wounded two of the Tigers, he himself suffered over a hundred slashes from the Tigers’ sabres.”

Tian SiSi: “One hundred and some sabre cuts?”

Tian Xin: “No more, no less. It was exactly 108 sabres, because this was the Tigers’ custom. When they captured someone alive, they would not slay him quickly with one

stroke, they must stab him multiple times and allow him to die slowly.”

Tian SiSi sighed: “I’m afraid there are very few people in this world who can withstand 108 sabres.”

Tian Xin said: “Not only very few, there simply isn’t anyone who can withstand it. But our Qin Ge stubbornly gritted his teeth and took it, because he did not want to die. He still needed to take revenge.”

Tian SiSi: “He still dared to take revenge?”

Tian Xin: “Not only did his body appeared to be made out of iron, but his courage was also iron cast. Everybody thought that since he was lucky enough to make it out alive this time, he would change his outlook.”

She sighed and continued on: “Who knew that on the second year, he arrived at Tiger Hill and searched out the Seven Tigers again. This time, he heavily injured four of them.”

Tian SiSi: “And himself?”

Tian Xin sighed: “He suffered over a hundred sabre cuts. This time, the Tigers naturally used more force, but he still withstood it. Afterwards, people who saw him said that after he suffered these 108 sabres, not a single spot on his body was unblemished, the blood he shed was enough to completely dye the rocks on the summit of Tiger Hill red.”

Tian SiSi chewed her lips and said: “Why didn’t those Tigers just kill him?”

Tian Xin: “Because that was their custom, if they were to give a person 108 slashes with the sabre, they will not cut any less, and their 108th slash must bear the same force as

their 1st slash. They never imagined that someone could still live after suffering over a hundred sabre slashes, much less have the guts to find them and take revenge.”

Tian SiSi: “But Qin Ge still withstood 216 sabres.”

Tian Xin: “He withstood 324 sabres.”

Tian SiSi: “Why?”

Tian Xin: “Because on the third year he went up again, and suffered another hundred plus sabre cuts. But this time he injured five out of the Seven Tigers.” [* Qin Ge reminds me of that guy from The Princess Bride - “Hello, my name is Inigo Montoya, you killed my father, prepare to die!]

Tian SiSi: “After coming across this type of person, weren’t they the least bit afraid? Why would they dare to let him live?”

Tian Xin: “It’s because they found it difficult to ‘dismount from the tiger’s back’. News of that event had already stirred up the martial world and there were a lot of people who arrived at Tiger Hill for the sole purpose of watching this confrontation.”

Tian SiSi: “Therefore they couldn’t just finish off Qin Ge on the 107th slash, their final strikes cannot be any more heavier than the first.”

Tian Xin: “That’s right. People like them, they must not lose face in front of members of the martial society no matter what. Otherwise who would fear them like before?”

Tian SiSi: “But five of them were already injured, why didn’t the other people just finish them?”

Tian Xin: "Because they all knew how much hardship Qin Ge had endured, how much bitter pain he had suffered through. Nobody wanted his efforts to be wasted, everyone hoped to see him kill all Seven Tigers by himself. Also, everyone knew that this 324th sabre was the last one."

Her eyes also started to shine: "Therefore after this final blow landed, and Qin Ge still haven't died, everyone couldn't help but cheer loudly."

Tian SiSi said: "Didn't those Seven Tigers realize that this was their final blow?"

Tian Xin: "They already prepared for this, therefore during that 3rd year, they hired many helpers. That's another reason why the others didn't just attack them."

Tian SiSi: "And on the fourth year?"

Tian Xin: "On the fourth year they found even more people to aid them, but even their own friends couldn't help but feel admiration towards Qin Ge. When Qin Ge attacked, not a single person helped them. After Qin Ge killed the last Tiger, the cheers coming from the summit of Tiger Hill were so thunderous they could be heard from ten li away."

Tian Si Si's attention was focused on the smoke curling up from the stove. She seemed to be seeing a black clothed young man with a red silk handkerchief tied around his neck. Within the smoke, came the distant sounds of cheering and laughter.

Tian Xin said: "Right then, Qin Ge's face broke into a smile for the first time. His laughter was so spirited, and yet so bittersweet. Because by then, his sweetheart was already dead. She was no longer able to see this glorious day."

She sighed lightly: "After that day, 'Iron Man' Qin Ge's name resonated throughout the martial world!"

Tian SiSi also sighed quietly: "He truly is a formidable big time celebrity."

Tian Xin said: "It's really hard to find a second person in this world as courageous and romantic as him."

Tian SiSi suddenly jumped up and grabbed her hand: "That's why I must marry him."

Her face carried a red glow. She looked determined, excited, and beautiful.

Tian Xin let out a laugh: "You want to marry him too? How many people do you actually want to marry?"

She tugged her finger and said: "Before you said you must marry Yue HuanShan, then you said you have to marry Liu FengGu, and now you want to marry Qin Ge. Who do you really want to marry?"

Tian SiSi said: "Whoever is the best, that's the one I will marry."

Her eyes grew excited, she blushed and said: "In your opinion, which one of these three men is the best?"

Tian Xin laughed: "How should I know? Even though these three are all formidable big time celebrities, I haven't even seen a single one."

She thought a bit, her own face getting red and hesitantly said: "I only know that Qin Ge is sentimental and courageous; Liu FengGu is the world's wisest person, no matter what the problem, he always comes up with a solution that nobody can dispute. If a girl can marry him, she would not have wasted her life."

Tian SiSi: “What about Yue HuanShan? Would marrying him not be good?”

Tian Xin nipped her lip: “He won’t do. He’s not any younger than Old Master.”

Tian SiSi also chewed her lips: “What has being old got to do with it? As long as he’s the best, even if he were 70 years old I’d still want to marry him.”

Tian Xin laughed abruptly: “What if he already has a wife?”

Tian SiSi said: “Having a wife also doesn’t matter, I’d be willing to be his second wife.”

Tian Xin couldn’t help but bust out laughing again: “What if the three of them are equally good? Are you willing to marry all three at once?”

Tian SiSi appeared to have not heard her speech and spaced out for a brief moment. Suddenly she lifted Tian Xin’s hand and whispered: “Sneak outside and buy me some men’s clothes, ok?”

Tian Xin became still: “Lady, what are you going to do with men’s clothes?”

Tian SiSi was quiet for a moment, and said softly: “Have you ever heard the story of Liang ShanBo and Zhu YingTai?”

Tian Xin smiled: “It was I who smuggled you those ‘silver tales’, how could I not have heard of it?”

Tian SiSi said: “It is said that if a young girl wants to go outside, she won’t be harassed if she disguised herself as a man.”

Tian Xin's eyes widened in surprise: "My Lady wants to leave the house?"

Tian SiSi nodded and bit her lips: "I want to see for myself which of the three is actually the best."

Tian Xin was so shocked she couldn't even laugh anymore: "Lady, you must be joking."

Tian SiSi: "Who's joking with you? Hurry up and find me some clothes."

Not only couldn't Tian Xin laugh, she was almost ready to cry. She threw up her hands and frowned: "Lady, please listen to me. If Old Master finds out, it'd be a miracle if he didn't break my leg".

Tian SiSi narrowed her eyes: "If you don't go, I'm going to break both your legs right now."

She suddenly blinked her bright eyes and smiled. She pinched Tian Xin's cheeks lightly and giggled: "Besides, you're not that young anymore. Don't you want to go out and find yourself a husband?"

Tian Xin couldn't brush away a feeling of shyness, but she leaped up and held onto her Lady: "You're willing to bring me with you?"

Tian SiSi laughed: "Of course, how could I bear to leave you all alone and bored in this house?"

Tian Xin's previously frightened pale face gradually flushed red, her pupils began to shine. She stared out the window and zoned out.

Tian SiSi's voice was gentle: "The world outside is so beautiful and so broad, especially ChiangNan. Right now

there are a multitude of purples and reds, this being the time when the flowers are blooming. If a person has never visited ChiangNan during his lifetime, he would have wasted his life.”

Tian Xin seemed to be dreaming and wandered over to the window. Her mind appeared to have flown out towards ChiangNan. Beside the gentle flowing waters, underneath the gentle willow, there is a gentle and romantic young man waiting for her.

What 16 year old girl didn't like to daydream?

Tian SiSi: “Hurry up and go. As long as you don't tell and I don't tell, Old Master will never know. After we bring back a son-in-law, he'll be so pleased.”

Even if Tian Xin's heart was willing, her mouth couldn't follow through. She shook her head vigorously: “It won't do, I still don't dare.”

Tian SiSi's face became stern: “Fine, little devil. Since you dare to disobey, I'm going to hand you over to Wang DaGuang in the stables.”

To use the term “Big Shine” to describe his face may not be appropriate, but no words can better describe his head. [*Big Shine is a rough translation of DaGuang]

His head was like a peeled hard-boiled egg, not a single strand of hair remained.

Unfortunately his face was not very bright. Each side of his face carried at least two to three hundred dark freckles, more spotted than a tangerine's skin.

The thought of this person made Tian Xin want to vomit. The thought of having to marry this type of person made her

legs weaken and she nearly had to kneel down.

Tian SiSi lightly said: “Whatever I say is a promise, whether you go or not is up to you.”

Tian Xin immediately said: “Go, go, go. I’ll go now. Don’t know if my Lady prefers to play the part of a heroic Hua MuLan or a graceful Zhu YingTai?”

A sky blue light satin shirt, a sky blue elegant cloth. Tian SiSi put them on her body and looked at her lone reflection in the copper mirror, appearing very satisfied with herself.

She made a serious expression with her face and then suddenly laughed: “Little Pouter, don’t I look like a worldly gentleman?”

Tian Xin also pressed her lips together and smiled: “Truly sophisticated and dashing. Even if Pan An was still alive to see you, he’d scurry back in the coffin.”

Tian SiSi wrinkled her brow: “Now I’m only worried about one thing.”

Tian Xin: “What’s that?”

Tian SiSi: “When a man like this steps outside, he’ll be sure to catch the eyes of many young ladies. Before I’d even find my husband, a girl will have chased me down to marry her. How will I manage?”

Tian Xin also wrinkled her brow: “This actually is a concern. If I didn’t know you were a woman, I’d marry you for sure.”

Tian SiSi: “Fine, I’ll have you then.”

She turned around, stretched out her hand and grinned: “Come my darling, let me hold you tight.”

Tian Xin squealed, shook her head, and ran.

Tian SiSi chased after her and grabbed her waist: “Don’t you want to? Even if you don’t, you still can’t escape.”

Tian Xin panted: “Even if I wanted to embrace, it wouldn’t be with someone of your appearance.”

Tian SiSi: “What’s wrong with this appearance?”

Tian Xin: “This behavior is so malicious, it’d be a wonder if easily-frightened girls won’t be scared to death by you.”

Tian Xin sighed: “Actually I have some news, but my Lady probably wouldn’t want to hear it so I don’t dare say.”

Tian SiSi chewed on her lips, after a moment she said warningly: “What don’t you dare say? Where’s your spine?”

Tian Xin said: “How can a servant have a spine.”

Seeing that her servant girl was feeling a bit bullied, even a lady’s heart becomes softer. She turned around and hugged Tian Xin: “You don’t want to speak, fine. I’ll just squeeze you until your little pouty lips open wide.”

Tian Xin was already laughing so hard she could barely breathe: “Ok my Lady, please release me, I’ll talk.....I’ll talk.....”

She panted for breath, then quietly said: “It’s been rumored that Old Master already has a mind to pair you up with Yang Third Master’s son.”

Tian SiSi perked up: “Which Yang Third Master?”

Tian Xin: “Naturally it is that government official Yang Third Master.”

Tian SiSi became very still for a moment, then suddenly said: “Hurry up and gather up the clothes, we’re leaving tonight.”

Tian Xin: “What’s the hurry?”

Tian SiSi: “I heard that Yang Third Master’s son is a weirdo, since childhood he’s spent time in a Buddhist Temple. Even the old monks all say he’s a strange monster from the skies. How can I stand to be with someone like this?”

She suddenly said again: “Let me take care of the clothes. You go hire a carriage and wait for me outside the gate to the rear garden.”

Tian Xin said: “Why hire a carriage? Wouldn’t riding a horse be somewhat faster?”

Tian SiSi: “We’ll have at least six or seven trunks to carry with us, how can we travel without a carriage?”

Tian Xin’s eyes opened wide: “Six or seven trunks? What does my Lady want to bring along?”

Tian SiSi was pensive: “Theres too many things I need to bring. For example, a powder case, a washbasin, a mirror, all these things need to be put in a trunk. Although we’re dressing up as guys, we can’t just stop washing our hair and cleaning our faces.”

She moved her eyes: “And then theres the bed cushions, pillows, these will also need a trunk, you know I never use other people’s things - oh yes, go wrap up my plate, bowl,

chopsticks, and napkins, as well as this incense burner and chessboard too.

Tian Xin listened until her eyes bulged: “My Lady, are you preparing a wedding dowry? You haven’t even found in-laws yet and you’re already preparing a dowry, don’t you think it’s a bit too early?”

Tian SiSi burst into laughter: “How should I behave then?”

Tian Xin: “Be a bit more gentle, a bit more considerate, first hold their hand and say something sweet to get them worked up, then allow them to come to you for a hug.”

Tian SiSi: “What should I say?”

Tian Xin: “For example, say you are lonely and that you’ve never seen a girl such as her, and after seeing her, your life took on new meaning. All you can think about is her and you can’t live without her.”

Before she even finished speaking, Tian SiSi was already doubling over in laughter: “These words are too cheesy, how can they be coming out of any man’s mouth?”

Tian Xin: “This is what you don’t understand, girls like to hear cheesy words, the cheesier the better.”

Tian SiSi giggled: “I wouldn’t have guessed you’d have so much experience in these matters, you must have heard these words from others quite often.”

Tian Xin blushed and pouted her lips: “A person is speaking seriously here, and you still joke with them.”

Tian SiSi: “Fine, I’ll ask you a serious question then.”

Tian Xin: “What?”

Tian SiSi winked: “I ask you, has a Little Pouty Mouth like you ever been intimate with anyone before?”

Tian Xin pounded on the bed, buried her head in the bed sheets, and covered her ears with her hands: “I’m not listening, I’m not listening, how can you say such an embarrassing thing.”

Tian SiSi’s face also got a little rosy and said softly: “Who knows how often other people our age have already experienced this kind of thing, what does it matter if I mention it?”

Tian Xin said: “Listening to you speak, it’d be really hard for people to believe you were a sheltered and high-class young lady.”

She sighed and shook her head: “This can only be blamed on Old Master, why hasn’t he already married you off? If you had a husband sooner, you wouldn’t be thinking such crazy thoughts every day.”

Tian SiSi flung her arm, turned her head and frowned: “Little devil, your words are becoming out of place.”

Seeing that her lady was about to lose her temper, Tian Xin became timid, shuffled over, and smiled: “I just heard some news, would my Lady like to hear it?”

Tian SiSi said: “I don’t want to listen.”

Chapter 3: A Canary and a Gang of Cats

Tian SiSi said: “If I don’t bring these things, which smelly man’s bedding would you have me sleep on, which smelly man’s bowl would you have me eat my rice from?”

Tian Xin giggled: “Even if my Lady doesn’t want to use other people’s things, we can still buy brand new items on the road.”

Tian SiSi: “Even the purchased stuff is dirty.”

Tian Xin: “Weren’t all these things purchased from somewhere?”

Tian SiSi pouted her lips: “I don’t care, I must bring all these things, can’t leave a single item, otherwise.....”

Tian Xin sighed and carried them down for her: “Otherwise you’ll bethroth me to Wang DaGuang, right?”

She rolled her eyes and chuckled: “Some people call others Pouty Lips, but actually pouts their lips even more than me.”

When she says she wants something, she has to have it. Even if you give the most sensible reason, she’d still regard you as spewing nonsense.

In the blink of an eye, she can lose her temper. But after another blink, she may have already forgotten the reason for losing her temper and hold your hand. This is Ms. Tian’s temper tantrum.

Therefore our Ms. Tian brought along her washbasin, powder case, mirror, bed cushions, pillows, incense burner,

chessboard.....and several more items you can't even begin to imagine, and started out on her journey.

This was her first time leaving the house.

Her destination was ChiangNan.

Because all three of her idols were in ChiangNan.

But what kind of place was ChiangNan? How far was it from her home?

What types of places will they pass on the road? What kind of people will they encounter?

Will they be good people? Or wicked people who will mistreat them.

Will the two of them get caught up in some dangerous situation? Will they even make it to ChiangNan?

Even if they arrived in ChiangNan, will they really be able to find her three big time celebrities?

And how will they react to her?

Ms. Tian didn't concern herself with any of these matters, as if all she needed to do was sit in the carriage, shut her eyes, and once she opened them again she would have arrived safely in ChiangNan, with the three celebrities all lined up waiting for her.

She thought that ChiangNan would be as safe as the garden behind her house, she thought that the inhabitants of the martial world were just like the ones in her house who catered to her whims.

For a female child like this to step into the martial world, do you think its dangerous or not?

If she can really arrive safely in ChiangNan, that would truly be a strange matter.

The things she encountered on the road were beyond most people's wildest dreams, if you recounted each event, it'd take you two or three years to tell.

Stars, full moon, the evening breeze was tepid and dry.

ZhongYuan usually has good weather.

The window was open, the trees on the side of the road flew by, the horse carriage was moving quickly.

Tian SiSi was like a canary who just flew out of its cage after over a decade of imprisonment, the farther the better, the faster the better.

The wind came in through the window, blowing on her and creating goosebumps all over her body. She stuck her head out the window and saw a full moon, like a spinning icy plate up in the sky, and exclaimed with excitement. As if it was the first time she's ever seen the moonlight, she called out: "Look at that, isn't this moonlight beautiful?"

Tian Xin said: "It's beautiful, very beautiful."

Tian SiSi: "I bet ChiangNan's moonlight is even more beautiful than the one here, its moon is probably rounder too."

Tian Xin winked her eye: "Isn't ChiangNan's moon the same as the one here?"

Tian SiSi sighed and shook her head: "You simply have no poetic sentiment."

Tian Xin stared out at the night and slowly said: "I don't want to write poems, I want to write a novel."

Tian SiSi: "A novel? What kind of novel?"

Tian Xin: "It'll be like 'Journey to the West', I've even thought of a name for it."

Tian SiSi laughed: "Who would have guessed our Little Pouty Mouth was such a talented girl, what kind of name did you come up with, tell me quick."

Tian Xin said: "'A Lady's Journey to the South'."

Tian SiSi: "'A Lady's Journey to the South'? You.....You're writing about me?"

Tian Xin: "That's right. The Lady would be you, and Journey to the South will be about all our adventures on the road."

Her cheeks flushed with excitement: "I bet we'll meet lots and lots of interesting people on our journey, and encounter lots and lots of interesting matters. If I write everything down, and let others see our adventures, it would be even more interesting."

Tian SiSi's interest perked up and she clapped her hands: "Great idea, only you can write this, and write it well, this book will probably become even more famous than 'Journey to the West'".

She suddenly became serious: "But we must not use our true names, to avoid angering Daddy when he reads it."

Tian Xin rolled her eyes: "What names should we use then.....'Journey to the West' was about Tang Seng, I can't make my Lady out to be a nun."

Tian SiSi: "If I'm Tang Seng then you're Sun WuKong, if I'm a female priest then you're a female ape."

She giggled and continued: "Monkeys also pout."

Tian Xin's lips suddenly got pouty: "Being Monkey Sun is no big deal, but Tang Seng should be a bit more careful."

Tian SiSi: "Careful about what?"

Tian Xin: "Careful about other people eating your Buddhist flesh."

Tian SiSi jumped up as if to twist her lips, but then sat back down again and furrowed her brows: "Bad, very bad."

Tian Xin tensed up: "What's the matter?"

Tian SiSi's face reddened, the color spreading out to her ears. She whispered: "I drank too much tea earlier, now I need to go really bad."

Tian Xin thought it was funny, but didn't think it would be polite to laugh and bit her lips: "How are we going to handle this? Can't really do it in the carriage....."

Tian SiSi: "I forgot something really important, we should have brought a bucket along with us."

Tian Xin couldn't control herself and bent over in laughter.

Tian SiSi said darkly: "What's so funny, you never had to pee before?"

Of course Tian Xin has experienced this, she knew how awful it felt.

She abruptly stopped laughing and whispered: "Theres nobody on the road, and it's dark, why don't you tell the carriage driver to stop, go into the woods by the road, and....."

"Pak" - Tian SiSi slapped her palm lightly: "Little Devil, what if someone burst in by chance....."

Tian Xin: "That's not a concern, I'll stand guard for you."

Tian SiSi shook her head vigorously: "No way...nooooo way, no matter what you say it won't do."

Tian Xin sighed: "If it won't do then theres no solution, best to just hold it in for a while."

Tian SiSi had already been holding it in until shes red in the face.

It's best to not think about it, the more you think the more you have to go.

Tian SiSi suddenly called loudly: "Driver, stop for a moment."

Tian Xin covered her laugh: "So there are times when our Lady will change her mind."

Tian SiSi stared at her sternly: "It just so happens that I have some instructions to tell the driver."

Tian Xin: "What instructions?"

Tian SiSi shook her head and mumbled: "What a child, don't even have an adult's common sense."

Once the carriage stopped, she quickly jumped down and shouted: "Driver, come over, I have something to say."

The driver lazily stepped down from the carriage and sauntered over slowly, with a simple-minded fruit brained appearance.

Tian SiSi felt very satisfied, her trip this time was very secretive, so of course she hoped the driver would be stupid. Stupid people rarely discover other people's secrets.

But she didn't feel relieved yet, she still needed to make sure, because she was a very level-headed and detail-oriented person with good common sense.

Therefore she asked: "Do you recognize us? Do you know who we are?"

The driver shook his head: "I don't recognize, I don't know."

Tian SiSi: "Do you know what place we came from?"

The driver: "I'm not a retard, how could I not know."

Tian SiSi got a little tense: "You know?"

The driver: "You came out from a door, of course."

Tian SiSi relaxed: "Do you know which family that door belonged to?"

The driver: "I don't know."

Tian SiSi: "Do you know what our destination is?"

The driver: "I don't know."

Tian SiSi rolled her eyes and asked again: "Do you think we are male or female?"

The driver smiled, exposing yellow teeth: "If you two are female, then I'm somebody's mother."

Tian SiSi also smiled and felt even more satisfied: "We want to walk around the area, you wait here, don't leave."

The driver smiled: "You two haven't paid for the ride yet, even if you kill me I won't leave."

Tian SiSi nodded her head: "That's right, if you leave you don't get paid, if you don't leave you will be rewarded."

The driver took out some tobacco from his belt, sat down on the ground, and started smoking.

Tian SiSi felt completely relieved, as soon as she resolved this, she started thinking about that other business again.

As soon as she started thinking of that, she couldn't stand it any more, and pulled Tian Xin into the woods.

It wasn't very dark inside the woods, but there wasn't a soul in sight.

Tian Xin whispered: "How about right here, without someone watching our carriage we can't go too far."

Tian SiSi said: "No, this area won't do. That driver is a retard, no need to worry about him."

People think that the more dark and secluded the place, the more peaceful. That is one of humanity's weaknesses.

Tian SiSi found the darkest area and whispered: "You stand guard here, yell out if anyone approaches."

Tian Xin just giggled.

Tian SiSi glared at her: “Little devil, what are you laughing at! You never seen anyone take a pee?”

Tian Xin smiled: “I wasn’t laughing at that, I was just thinking that even if nobody came, if by chance there happened to be a snake.....”

Tian SiSi jumped up with a frightened expression, and searched for something to stuff her mouth with.

Tian Xin begged for mercy but Tian SiSi would have none of it, both girls screamed and laughed and argued. Nobody heard the sound of the neighing horse outside the woods.

By the time they finished arguing and exited the woods, the driver and the carriage have all disappeared without a trace.

Tian SiSi was still.

Tian Xin was also still.

Both girls looked at each other and was silent for a long time. Tian Xin sighed deeply: “We treated him like he was retarded, who knew he regarded us as the real retards, we were really dumb, and he just pretended to be.”

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, too angry to even speak.

Tian Xin: “What should we do now?”

Tian SiSi: “No matter what we do, I’m not returning home.”

She suddenly asked: “Did you bring my jewelry?”

Tian Xin nodded her head.

Tian SiSi stamped her foot: "We should have removed the package from the carriage."

Tian Xin took out a package: "What do we have here?"

Tian SiSi jumped for joy: "I knew you were a wily little devil."

Tian Xin sighed and muttered: "What a child, no adult common sense at all."

The road was not dark, the stars and moon were out.

Two people strolled along leisurely, their recent bad mood seemed to be long forgotten.

Tian SiSi smiled: "After losing the stuff, I actually feel less tied down."

Tian Xin winked: "You're not afraid of using the same bedding that other smelly men use?"

Tian SiSi: "What's there to be afraid of, we'll just buy new ones. The bedding I had before was also purchased somewhere."

Tian Xin laughed: "Although our Lady has a peculiar temper, she can still be open to reason. But she suffers from a bit of memory loss, with a turn of the head she's forgotten the words she said."

Tian SiSi glared at her, then suddenly furrowed her brow: "There's one thing that seemed quite strange to me."

Tian Xin: "What's that?"

Tian SiSi: "The driver didn't collect his fee yet, so why would he just leave?"

inevitably Xin paused for a moment, and then nodded her head: “Yeah, why didn’t I think of that?”

With a “pak”, Tian SiSi lightly hit her: “Dummy, of course he knew that the stuff we had on the carriage was very valuable, even after buying an entire carriage you’d still have plenty left over.”

Tian Xin said: “Aiya, Lady is so talented to have figured out such a complex riddle, I really admire you.”

A Lady will inevitably be a Lady.

A Lady’s way of thinking sometimes caused people to not know if they should laugh or cry.

The sky was bright.

The roosters were making noise, their stomachs were also making noise.

Tian SiSi mumbled: “Strange, why would a person’s stomach make “gu-gu” noises?”

Tian Xin: “A stomach will make noise when it’s hungry.”

Tian SiSi: “Why would it make noise when it’s hungry?”

Tian Xin didn’t have any way to answer this, the Lady’s questions were always difficult for others to answer.

Tian SiSi sighed: “I never realized it was so uncomfortable being hungry.”

Tian Xin: “You’ve never been hungry?”

Tian SiSi: “There were several times when I didn’t want to eat lunch, and by the time late afternoon rolled around I felt

like I was going crazy from hunger. Now I realize that those times cannot be considered hunger.”

Tian Xin: “Didn’t you say that a person living in this world should experience all kinds of things?” Tian SiSi said: “But I’ve already tasted enough of this hunger, right now I just want to eat a piece of slow-roasted, tender, red meat.”

Tian Xin: “Then you’d better return home to eat some.”

Tian SiSi: “They don’t even sell red-roasted meat out here?”

Tian Xin: “At the very least, not right now. The restaurants aren’t even open yet.”

She thought about it some more: “I’ve heard of a teahouse that opened in the morning, and sold things to eat. Many of these teahouses are usually near the food market.”

Tian SiSi clapped and laughed: “That’s great news, I had already planned on checking out the food market. And there are teahouses too. I heard that a lot of things happened in teahouses in the martial world.”

Tian Xin: “Sure, there are all kinds of people at these places, especially swindlers.”

Tian SiSi laughed: “As long as we’re careful, who can swindle us? They should be grateful we don’t cheat them.”

Naturally, there was a food market in the city. Naturally, there were teahouses near the food market. Naturally, there were all kinds of people inside with no shortage of drifters and swindlers.

The beef noodles came in a large bowl, with inch wide noodles that were razor thin, and thick oil in the soup.

Each piece of meat was five or six ounces.

Eating in a place like this, the emphasis was on being economical. Nobody is really concerned about whether it tastes any good.

In the past, the Lady wouldn't even touch the chopsticks here, but today she finished half the bowl in one breath of time and even cleaned up the pieces of meat.

Tian Xin watched her and suddenly smiled: "This bowl and chopsticks were used by smelly men, how dare you use it?"

Tian SiSi paused and chuckled: "I forgot about that, when a person's stomach is hungry one can forget about everything."

Tian SiSi brushed her face and anxiously whispered: "Is my face really dirty?"

Tian Xin: "Not at all."

Tian SiSi: "Then why are these people all staring at me?"

Tian Xin laughed: "Maybe they're looking for a husband for their daughters."

Her hands were gripping the package tightly, not even releasing it while she was eating.

Tian SiSi suddenly said: "Let go of the package and place it on the table."

Tian Xin: "Why?"

Tian SiSi: "When out in the world you must not forget 'never reveal your valuables'. The way you're holding onto

that package, one look and others will know that there are valuable things inside, it won't be long before someone comes to start trouble. If you act nonchalant, others won't notice."

Tian Xin giggled: "I didn't think my Lady was such a worldly person."

Tian SiSi stared at her: "Who is your Lady?"

Tian Xin: "I meant Master."

As she placed the package on the table, she noticed a man approaching. He saluted them and said: "Good morning to you two."

This person didn't appear very classy, and even looked a bit shady, one look and you can tell that he wasn't a good person.

At first Tian SiSi didn't want to acknowledge him, but in order to give off the appearance of an experienced person from the martial world, she stood up and saluted: "Good morning."

This person seated himself and smiled: "It looks like this is your first time here."

Tian SiSi: "We've been here several times already, I'm pretty familiar with all the places in this city."

The person said: "Since you have been running around out in the city, you should recognize this city's Big Boss Zhao."

Listening to this man's tone, it seemed like this Big Boss Zhao was an important person in the city, if one didn't

recognize him then one wasn't an experienced person in the martial world.

Tian SiSi: "We're not that close, just had dinner together a few times."

The person laughed: "From what you just said, it appears that we're all one big family. I'm Tie GeBo, one of Big Boss Zhao's fellow brethren."

He suddenly lowered his voice: "Since we're of one family, theres something I must tell you."

Tian SiSi: "Go ahead."

Tie GeBo: "This place is pretty sketchy, with all kinds of bad people, if you have valuables in your package, then it's best to be careful."

Tian Xin wanted to reach out and grab the package, but Tian SiSi gave her a look and casually said: "This package only contains a few change of clothes, no need to be careful."

Tie GeBo laughed and slowly stood up: "I only wanted to express some good intentions, you two....."

He quickly grabbed the package, turned around, and ran.

Tian SiSi laughed coldly. Seeing this person's legwork, even if she allowed him a fifty foot head start, she could still bring him back as soon as she set into motion.

The Lady wasn't the delicate type of female, during one time at a village square, she only had to use three or five moves to defeat a well-known martial arts exhibitionist.

According to that street performer, Ms. Tian's martial arts could be considered first-class in the martial world. Even ChiangNan's most famous female heroine, "Jade Orchid", might not be her match.

This time unfortunately, before the Lady had a chance to reach out her hand, and before Tie GeBo could run out the door, he was blocked by a powerful, cold-looking man with a knife scar across his face who reached out his hand and boxed him across the ears.

He said sharply: "Wretch, return the package to them."

Not only did Tie GeBo not dare to fight back, he didn't even dare to make noise. Massaging his face with his palm, he politely brought the package back.

That large man also walked over, and gripped his fist in salute: "I'm surnamed Zhao, this is one of my little brothers, these past few days we've been poor to the point of insanity, that's how come he could do such a despicable act, feel free to hit or punish.

Not only did Tian SiSi feel that this person displayed an air of righteousness, his style wasn't too bad either. She broke out in a grin: "Thanks for the friend's aid. Since the package was not lost, just let it be. No need to bring it up anymore."

The large man glared at Tie GeBo: "Since this is the case, why don't you quickly thank this young gentleman's graciousness."

Tian SiSi suddenly said: "If brother is surnamed Zhao, are you this city's Big Boss Zhao?"

The large man said: "I'm humbled."

Tian SiSi: "I've admired your reputation, please sit down."

Big Boss Zhao waved his hand: "Let me take care of this table's account."

Tian SiSi: "How can that be, this time I must be the host."

She grabbed the package as if to take some money out, but only took out a gem-encrusted butterfly. The package did not contain any money.

Big Boss Zhao's pupils widened and he suddenly lowered his voice: "These types of things can't be used to pay the bill, if Brother is short on cash, I can bring you somewhere to exchange that for money, I guarantee the exchange rate will be fair."

He patted his chest and continued: "I'm not bragging, nobody in this city would dare cheat a friend of Big Boss Zhao's".

Tian SiSi hesitated and was just about to say "yes" when she suddenly saw a long-robed, sword carrying, middle-aged man come over and address Big Boss Zhao: "Knife Scar Six, are you still using my name to cheat others?"

This Big Boss Zhao immediately stood up, bowing and grinning: "I wouldn't dare, Big Boss Zhao you are well....." Before he finished his sentence, he ran away like dissipating smoke, disappearing without a trace.

Tian SiSi watched with wide eyes and before she could figure out what just happened here, the long-robed, sword carrying, middle-aged man greeted them: "I am surnamed Zhao, this city's friends call me Big Boss, but I cannot live up to such a name."

Tian SiSi then understood, this person was the real Big Boss Zhao, the one earlier was just pretending.

Big Boss Zhao said: “Knife Scar Six is a famous swindler in this city, who oftentimes uses my identity to trick others, I’m afraid the two of you almost fell for his scam just now.”

Tian SiSi’s face reddened: “But when my package got stolen, it was actually him who got it back.”

Big Boss Zhao laughed: “That Tie GeBo actually planned ahead of time with him to cunningly act out this play, in order to win your trust and then really swindle you.”

He laughed again and continued: “Anyone could tell that with such a shine in your eyes, your skills could not be weak, depending on Tie GeBo’s talent, how could he escape your grasp?”

Tian SiSi secretly let out a sigh, this was called: One cannot gain knowledge without going through an experience.

But her heart was suddenly happy and she said: “You could really tell that we knew martial arts?”

Big Boss Zhao smiled: “Not only know martial arts, but surely a master as well, therefore I would really like to make friends with two such as yourselves, otherwise I might not have bothered to stick my nose in this matter.”

Tian SiSi was very delighted, she didn’t imagine that she’d encounter this type of valiant person right after leaving home. She saluted and said: “Please sit down, please sit down and talk.”

Big Boss Zhao said: “This place is too chaotic, not a good place to talk. If the two of you don’t mind, how about

carrying on this conversation at my place?”

Big Boss Zhao's dwelling was not particularly large, it only consisted of two small buildings within a huge courtyard, the arrangements inside the buildings were plain and didn't quite match his clothing.

Not only did Tian SiSi not find this peculiar, she even considered it quite logical.

For a member of the martial world like Big Boss Zhao, even if he was wealthy he'd go out and spend it with friends, rather than using it for private enjoyment. For someone like him, he'd obviously not take too much interest in his house.

Big Boss Zhao said: “If the two of you have no pressing matters to attend to, please stay here for a few days and allow me to invite my friends in the city to come meet you.”

Tian SiSi said happily: “Great idea, the reason I came out this time was to meet new friends.”

Tian Xin suddenly interrupted: “But wouldn't this be a great inconvenience for Master Zhao?”

Tian SiSi gave her a look: “For someone like Big Brother Zhao, if we act too polite about these things, it would only mean that we don't consider him enough of a friend.”

Big Boss Zhao patted his hand and laughed: “Precisely, this Brother is a no-nonsense man, by accepting my offer you only demonstrate that we're good brothers.”

“No-nonsense man”, “Good brothers”, these two phrases made Tian SiSi very happy. If even someone like Big Boss Zhao couldn't see that they were girls disguised as men, then who can? She couldn't help but secretly admire herself, it's as if she had a natural talent for adventuring in the

martial world, first time disguising herself as a man and it was already so convincing.

Big Boss Zhao continued: "Brother, if you need anything just let Big Brother know. Okay, I'll go grab some money and give it to you guys to carry along so you can comfortably get what you need."

Tian SiSi: "That's not necessary, I still have some jewelry here....."

Her face reddened, and hurriedly said: "It's my little sister's jewelry, it can still be exchanged for some money."

Big Boss Zhao said earnestly: "Brother, that wouldn't be right. You just said let's not be too polite, and now you're suddenly being polite. I'm going to go get some money now, and buy some wine, when I return we'll all have a good drink."

He started to walk out without waiting for Tian SiSi's reply, but turned around and took out a key to open a cabinet by the bed: "It's not convenient to carry along such valuables, let's just lock it in here. Although we shouldn't need to worry about it, it never hurts to be a little more careful."

He thought about everything so thoroughly. After locking the package inside the cabinet, he gave the key to Tian Xin and smiled: "This young steward seems to be quite meticulous about doing things, he can guard the key then."

Tian SiSi felt a bit embarrassed about it all, but Tian Xin quickly grabbed the key.

After waiting for Big Boss Zhao to leave, Tian Xin suddenly whispered: "It seems to me that this Big Boss Zhao is not a good thing, I wonder what scheme he's cooking up?"

Tian SiSi laughed: “Little Devil, your suspicious heart is really acting up. He offered us his home, and went to get money for us, where does one find this kind of decent person?”

Tian Xin said: “But our package.....”

Tian SiSi: “The package is locked within this cabinet, the key is on your person, and you’re still not relieved?”

Tian Xin pouted and didn’t say a word.

Tian SiSi didn’t pay any more attention to her, clasped her hands and walked outside. She discovered that there were ten households within this courtyard, several varieties of clothing were hung up to dry on a bamboo pole, not a single one was new, the living conditions must not be very good for the people who resided here.

It was not yet noon. A few people in the courtyard were exercising with stone shackles and flipping somersaults, there were also two girls who were combing their braids. Tian SiSi knew that these must be the types of people who wandered the martial world, practicing for their performances.

Over on the side was a blind old man playing the lute, a woman with her head lowered stood nearby, slowly playing with a few sweetheart beans in her hand. The old man was obviously a street performer. The woman who was playing with the beans, could it be that she was falling in love? Did her sweetheart secretly give those to her? Tian SiSi couldn’t help but giggle.

The woman glanced over, gave her a meaningful look, then lowered her head again and held the sweetheart beans against her chest.

“Is this woman attracted to me? She doesn’t want me to know that she has a boyfriend, so is that why she hid her sweetheart beans?” Tian SiSi suddenly didn’t dare look over there anymore.

Even though she thought it was interesting, she didn’t want to attract this kind of trouble. In the courtyard were several children with runny noses building castle walls out of mud.

A pregnant woman was lighting a fire, her eyes were getting red from the smoke, tears coming out non-stop. Looking at her belly, it would appear that she was at least eight or nine months pregnant, her baby could come out at any time.

Yet her mother-in-law was nagging by her side, calling her lazy, but still wiping her face for her with a handkerchief.

Tian SiSi experienced a feeling of warmth. She felt that this was what living life was all about.

She had never been this close to real living. She suddenly felt very envious of the pregnant woman -- although she had no riches, no jewelry, none of the makeup from the city, not five pieces of silver or an inch of a satin skirt: but she had her own lifestyle, she had love, her life was already very vibrant.

“If a person were to be confined in a garden, watching the clouds come and go, flowers bloom and die, although she can obtain the best comforts of life, how would that be any different than a canary being raised in a cage?” Tian SiSi sighed, and only hated herself for not having the courage to escape her cage sooner.

She resolved to take advantage of this opportunity, and enjoy life to the fullest.

The fire was burning, the food was already cooking on the stove.

The sound of the lute stopped, the old man pulled out his tobacco. The woman lightly pounded his back for him.

Tian Xin suddenly ran out and anxiously said: "Why hasn't Big Boss Zhao come back by now?"

Tian SiSi: "Maybe he isn't ready to yet, and needed to walk farther to get more money."

Tian Xin: "I'm just afraid he might have slipped away."

Tian SiSi stared: "He didn't even swindle a bit of our money, why would he want to slip away?"

Tian Xin pouted her lips again, turned her head, and ran back into the building.

The food in the pot gradually cooked, the smell of the rice attracted a young, tanned fellow.

His body was covered with perspiration, obviously the result of a hard morning's work.

That pregnant woman immediately welcomed him, helping him wipe his sweat. The young fellow softly patted her belly, and whispered a few words in her ears. The young wife gave him a meaningful look, and laughed a little.

Two dogs in the courtyard were stealing some scraps.

The little kids who played until their entire bodies were covered with mud, got yelled at and spanked by their mother.

Big Boss Zhao still hasn't returned.

Tian SiSi was also growing a little impatient.

Tian Xin suddenly rushed out from the house.

Looking at her expression, it was as if her tail was on fire, she was stamping her feet non-stop: "Oh no, oh no....."

Tian SiSi wrinkled her brow: "What are you getting so worked up about, do you need to pee too? There's a bathroom here."

Tian Xin: "No.....no.....our belongings....."

Tian SiSi: "Isn't our package locked inside that cabinet?"

Tian Xin shook her head vigorously: "It's not, the cabinet is empty, there's nothing there."

Tian SiSi: "That's silly talk, I personally placed the package inside."

Tian Xin: "But it has disappeared. Just now I was not feeling comfortable and opened up the cabinet to look, only to find out....."

Tian SiSi also became anxious and ran inside, the cabinet truly was empty.

Where did the package go? Did it sprout wings and fly out of a locked cabinet?

Tian Xin gasped: "The cabinet has three sides, but there's a hole in the wall, Big Boss Zhao must have reached in from the outside and stolen the package. I knew he wasn't a good person."

Tian SiSi stamped her feet and hurried outside.

Everyone else had returned home to eat their meal, only the few people who were training were still outside in the darkening courtyard, drawing water to wash their faces.

Tian SiSi rushed over and said: “Big Boss Zhao? Do you guys know where he is?”

The young men all looked at each other, then said: “Who is Big Boss Zhao? We don’t recognize him.”

Tian SiSi said: “The one living in that building, who is also your neighbor. How could you not recognize him?”

Chapter 4: The Elegant Madame Wang

The young fellow said: "Those two buildings have been empty for half a month, it was only early this morning that someone moved in and paid a half month's rent, how would we know who he was?".

Tian SiSi froze. Tian Xin was also stunned.

Suddenly somebody said: "Did someone just ask about Big Brother Zhao, who was it?".

This person came in and walked over, his hand was carrying a whip, he looked like a carriage driver.

Tian SiSi greeted him immediately: "I was asking, do you recognize him?".

The man nodded: "Of course I do, by just roaming about the city how can one not recognize Big Boss Zhao?".

Tian SiSi happily said: "Can you lead us to him?".

The man looked the two of them over several times: "You two are.....".

Tian SiSi: "We're both his good friends.".

The man immediately laughed: "Since you're Big Brother Zhao's friends, what more is there to discuss, please step up onto my carriage and I'll take you.".

The carriage stopped in front of a run-down building, the carriage driver said: "Right now Big Brother Zhao is drinking

with a guest inside this building, I still have things to do and can't accompany you two."

Without even taking the time to say "thanks", Tian SiSi was already storming inside. She was afraid of letting Big Boss Zhao slip away again.

This Lady had never been so angry, she promised herself as soon as she sees Big Boss Zhao, she's going to box his ears at least seventeen or eighteen times.

There really were two people drinking inside this building, one of them had a face that was jaundiced and thin, as if he was sick; the other one was full of energy, a powerful looking man with a heavy beard.

Tian SiSi yelled loudly: "Where is Big Boss Zhao? Quickly tell him to come out and see me."

That sickly looking man measured her with squinted eyes: "Why are you looking for him?"

Tian SiSi: "Of course it's regarding a matter, a very urgent matter."

The man lifted his cup, sipped a bit of wine, and coldly said: "If you have anything to say, you may tell me. I am Big Boss Zhao."

Tian SiSi was startled: "You're Big Boss Zhao? You're not the one I'm looking for."

The large heavily bearded man laughed: "This is the only Big Boss Zhao there is, you won't be able to find a second one within 800 li."

Tian SiSi's face suddenly became pale. Could it be that that long-robed, sword carrying "Big Boss Zhao" was just

another pretender?

That sickly looking man took another sip of wine, and casually said: “It seems like this friend must have run across ‘Qian YiTao’. Two months ago I heard that he was using my name to con others, I should have taught him a lesson earlier, but unfortunately I’ve never been able to track him down.”.

Tian SiSi couldn’t help but ask: “Who is Qian YiTao?”.

Big Boss Zhao said: “Did you meet someone wearing long satin robes, with a sword strapped around his waist, acting very stylish, who was around forty or so?”.

Tian SiSi: “That’s absolutely correct.”.

The large heavily bearded man laughed: “That was Qian YiTao, his only belonging is that set of clothes he wears in order to deceive people, that’s why he’s called Qian YiTao.”.

Big Boss Zhao said: “Although he only has one set of clothes, he has more than one method of deceiving others, it seems like you must have fallen for his tricks.”.

Tian SiSi grinded her teeth: “Can the two of you help me find this Mr. Qian?”.

Big Boss Zhao: “This person is very cunning, and he would probably be laying low these past couple of days, in order to find him, we should wait a few more days.”.

He suddenly laughed and continued: “Did he trick you out of all your belongings?”.

Tian SiSi felt her face going red, and forced herself to nod.

Big Boss Zhao: “Was this your first time here?”.

Tian SiSi could only nod her head again.

Big Boss Zhao: “None of that matters, first I can arrange for you a place to stay, allowing you a safe and comfortable place to wait. After six or seven days, I guarantee that I will find your money for you.”.

Tian SiSi blushed: “How.....how would that not be an imposition?”.

Big Boss Zhao: “It’s not an imposition at all. It is commonly said: At home, one depends on their parents, outside the house, one depends on their friends. By willing to come find me, you two have already given me face.”.

Although this person appeared sickly, it seems like he was actually an honorable person of the martial world.

Tian SiSi was both embarrassed and anxious. Giving forth the appearance of not being hung up about these things, she said: “In that case, Little Brother will politely follow your orders.”.

The large heavily bearded man looked them over several times and smiled: “I suggest we invite them to stay at Madame Wang’s place. Everybody is female there, so it’ll be a bit more convenient”.

Tian SiSi became still and said: “All women? How will that do, we’re.....we’re.....”.

The large heavily bearded man smiled: “Aren’t you two women?”.

Tian SiSi’s face reddened even more, she turned to look at Tian Xin.

Tian Xin carried an expression of resignation, Tian SiSi could only sigh and with a forced smile said: "I didn't think that your eyesight was so good."

The large heavily bearded man said: "It's not that our eyesight is good.....".

He laughed, and left some words unsaid.

Tian SiSi pressed on and asked: "If it's not your good eyesight, then what is it? Are our disguises not adequate?"

Big Boss Zhao also laughed suddenly and said: "With disguises such as yours, if someone couldn't tell you two are female, then he must be a blind man."

Tian SiSi gave a slight pause: "Given this, could it be that Qian fellow also saw through it?"

Big Boss Zhao softly said: "Qian YiTao is not a blind man."

Tian SiSi paused again, and then suddenly took the ribbon off the top of her head, tossed it to the ground, and laughed coldly: "So what if I'm a woman, sooner or later I'll let that one surnamed Qian know that a woman is also not good to cross."

Thereupon our Lady Tian returned once more to her female appearance.

Therefore her troubles only increased more and more.

Madame Wang was also a woman.

There are many kinds of women, Madame Wang is a most special kind.

Her uniqueness is something you wouldn't be able to guess in your wildest dreams.

Madam Wang's house is located at a peaceful alley. Two high walls blocked the sun with a branch of apricot dangling outside.

It is past noon, Zhu Hong's door is still closed tightly, silence behind the doors.

Just by looking at the door, everyone can see Madam Wang should be an important person.

Tian SiSi feeling overjoyed couldn't resist the question, "Do you think Madam Wang will let us live here?"

Big Boss Zhao nodded, "Rest assure, Madam Wang is not only my old friend, but also my good friend.

Tian SiSi asked, "What kind of person is she?"

Big Boss Zhao responded, "She is a nice person, but her temper can be strange."

Tian SiSi, "How so?"

Big Boss Zhao, "If you are willing to listen to her, she can grant you anything. Living in this place will definitely be more comfortable than living at home. If you cause trouble in front of her then you will definitely regret it greatly."

His expression while talking was very serious, intending to scare Tian SiSi.

Instead, Tian SiSi laughed, "This type of temper isn't that strange. I don't like people causing trouble in front of me either."

Big Boss Zhao, "That's good; looks at you guys will be able to bond with each other."

He went to knock on the door and said, "I will go in first. You guys wait outside."

Letting someone like Lady Tian wait outside is a big disgrace.

Tian Xin thought Tian SiSi was definitely going to lose her temper. However, she restrained herself. She's only been out for less than a day, it seems like she has already changed a lot.

Finally an answer came, after a few knocks on the door.

A person impatiently answered, "It's so early in the morning, what the hell are you guys doing here? Can't you wait until dusk?"

Big Boss Zhao smiled, "It's me, Big Boss Zhao."

The door opened.

A girl with messy hair stuck her head out. Before she could look out, Big Boss Zhao already got close and whispered something into her ear.

The girl's eye turned, looked at Tian SiSi a couple of times from head to bottom and nodded, "Ok come on in. Keep your footsteps light, the girls are still sleeping. If you disturb them, Madam Wang is going to tear your skin off."

While they are walking in, Tian SiSi thought to herself, "Looks like these girls are lazier than me. The sun has been out for so longer, yet they are still not awake yet."

The large heavily bearded man not only has good eyes, but also a good set of ears. He laughed and said, "As you can see how nice Madam Wang is to these girls. You guys are really lucky to be able to live here."

Tian Xin blinked, suddenly said, "Who are all these people that are living here? Are they related to Madam Wang?"

The heavily bearded man, "Most of these people are Madam Wang's step-daughters. No matter where she goes, no one will dare to bully her."

Tian Sisi, "I don't want to become her step-daughter, but I really want to be her friend."

The heavily bearded man, "Yes, yes. Madam Wang likes to make friends, just like "Second Master" Tian, Tian BaiShi.

Tian SiSi and Tian Xin looked at each other. The two of them closed their mouths and smiled without saying a word.

At this time, Big Brother Zhao approached them full of joy and said, "Madam Wang has already agreed to let you two meet her."

A tall pretty middle aged woman stood at the door. Although she had a smile on her face, her eyes look stern. She stared at Tian SiSi and said, "These two little sisters?"

Big Brother Zhao, "Yes that's it."

The pretty middle aged woman nodded, "They look pretty elegant, they are probably from a good family, Madam Wang will like them."

Big Brother Zhao, "If they are some ordinary girls from nowhere I wouldn't even dare to bring them here."

The pretty middle age woman, "Good I'll bring them in. You are finished with your task, go back now."

Big Brother Zhao let out a big smile, bowed and said, "Yes, I am rest assured."

Tian SiSi asked, "You won't accompany us in?"

Big Brother Zhao, "I already spoke to Madam Wang. Just relax and stay, if I have any news I will contact you guys."

He acknowledged the heavily bearded man on his way out without saying anything. Tian SiSi wanted to ask some more questions, but he was already too far out.

The pretty middle aged woman gestured to let them in. Tian SiSi thought about it for a second then finally walked in with Tian Xin.

The door closed. It's as if there's no way out.

But the pretty middle aged woman let out a warm smile, "When you guys first live here, you might not be use to it. After awhile, you will begin to like this place more and more.

Tian Xin, "We won't stay here for too long, just 5 or 6 days."

The pretty middle aged woman pretended like she didn't hear what Tian Xin said. She said, "This place has a total of twenty girls. Everyone is like sisters. My last name is Mei. Everyone calls me Sister Mei. If you guys have any questions or concerns please come and speak to me."

Tian Xin wanted to say something but Tian SiSi gave her stare and said, "This place is great, very quiet. We will like it around here, no need to trouble you Sister Mei."

This place is no doubt peaceful and pretty. Past the courtyard in the front and through the cloister is a large garden filled with beautiful flowers, bird chirps. It is definitely comparable to Jin Xiu Manor.

The garden has a lot of little red and green platforms. There are a couple of lovely girls standing there playing with their hair, blankly staring at the garden.

These girls are pretty with high class clothes. However, everyone seems tired, like they didn't get enough sleep.

A pair of butterflies is flying back and forth around the garden. A large cat curled under the roof, under the brim and inside the bird cage there is a pair of chirping canard birds.

When they walk into the garden, the people didn't notice, the cat didn't care, butterflies didn't care, birds didn't care either. It seems like no one cares about each other.

Tian SiSi thought about her own life and said, "This place is good except it's too quiet."

Sister Mei, "You like liveliness?"

Tian SiSi, "When it's too quiet, I like to have random thoughts. I don't really like these random thoughts."

Sister Mei, "That's great. It's quiet now, but at night it will be lively. Whether you like a quiet life or lively life, this place will suit both."

Tian SiSi looked up, "These girls doesn't seem like the type that like a lot of noise."

Sister Mei, "They are nocturnal. They may look tired now, but as soon as the night hits, they will be like dragons and

tigers making so much noisy that people can't stand."

Tian SiSi laughed too, "I don't mind noise. Sometimes I throw a big fit, giving everyone a headache. Don't believe me? Ask Tian Xin."

Tian Xin pouted her lips, "Why are you asking me? I don't understand or know anything."

Sister Mei, "This little sister seems to not like that place. I can guarantee that she will slowly like it here."

Her smile is warm like that spring breeze, but her eyes are as cold as winter frost.

Tian Xin wanted to say something, but when she looked at Sister Mei's eyes, her heart dropped and couldn't talk anymore.

They walked past the small bridge. Next to the small bridge there is a small building. From there, a sorrow voice, "I can't stand this anymore, can't stand it.. I don't want to live anymore. I want to die."

A girl with her hair disheveled and face full of tears rushed out of the small building. She is wearing a red gown with some spots severed.

No one paid attention to her. The girls that were standing at the widow didn't even look at her.

Only Sister Mei walked towards her and whispered something into her ear.

The girl was screaming and yelling, but now she is like a little cat, lowered her head and walked back to her home.

Sister Mei's face is still full of affection, as if nothing had happened.

Tian SiSi couldn't help but ask, "What was wrong with her?"

Sister Mei sighed, "Before she came here, she was greatly traumatized. She goes crazy sometimes, we're use to it."

If it wasn't a common occurrence how can nobody care for her.

Tian SiSi asked again, "I wonder what happened to her before?"

Sister Mei, "We are sure not sure and didn't ask her. We didn't want to bring up her old problems. I heard she was very badly betrayed by a man before."

Tian Sisi, "All men are evil."

Sister Mei nodded, "There are very few nice man around. Remember that and you won't suffer in the future."

They turned past some rockwork and went into a flower forest.

Although the flowers are fading, but it's even more glamorous than when they were in season.

Deep into the flowery craven, a red building appeared.

Sister Mei, "Madam Wang lives here. She probably just woke up. I'll inform her that you guys are here."

She walked away with her elegant pose, like the goddess of flower.

Tian SiSi looked at her and let out a sigh, "If I can still look as pretty as her at her age, I will be satisfied."

Tian Xin bit her lips and said, "Ms, let's get out of here."

Tian SiSi, "Go? Go where?"

Tian Xin, "Anywhere, let's not stay here any longer."

Tian SiSi, "Why?"

Tian Xin, "I don't know... This place just doesn't seem right."

Tian SiSi, "Which area doesn't seem right?"

Tian Xin, "Everywhere seems not right. Everyone seems weird. Their lives are different, I can't even guess what this place is."

Tian SiSi surprisingly laughed, shaking her head, "You are a suspicious frame of mind. Just because someone tricked us before, we can't treat everyone as swindlers."

She looked at the far red building and said, "On top of that, I really want to meet Madam Wang. I bet she is no ordinary woman."

Anyone that meets Madam Wang will not think that she is a swindler.

If some people say Sister Mei is a elegant, standout woman, then when these people meet Madam Wang, instead these some people won't have anything to say.

This is because there is no word on this Earth that can describe her presence and style.

Elegance is not a word that can describe her.

If there needs to be a words that describes her, then it's:

Perfection.

Perfection without any flaws.

When Tian SiSi walked in, Madam Wang was enjoying her breakfast.

When woman eat, they don't like to be seen by others. She will become very unnatural.

Madam Wang is an exception.

Whatever she does, every move she makes is flawless.

She doesn't eat meagerly. She understands that if a person has to maintain youth and liveliness, one has to start from the diet. If a flower wants to grow well, it has to have plenty of water and sunshine.

Although she doesn't eat meagerly, it doesn't seem to affect her body.

Every part on her body is perfect.

Her face, her eyes, nose, mouth, even her smile is perfect like a myth. Only in a myth can we meet such woman.

Tian SiSi became attracted to her when she first laid eyes on her.

Madam Wang enjoys Tian SiSi's company too. When she saw her, her smile became even friendlier.

Madam Wang looked up Tian SiSi and gently spoke, "Come here, sit next to me. Let me look at you carefully."

Her gaze and smile encompasses the magic that makes you obey. No matter the gender, no one can resist her.

Tian SiSi walked over and sat in an empty chair next to Madam Wang.

Madam Wang's gaze never left Tian SiSi. Slowly, she pushed the left over bird's nest soup that was in front of her towards Tian SiSi and gently said, "This soup is still warm, eat some."

Lady Tian has never used other people's stuff before. Eat another person's leftovers? That's nearly impossible.

But now she held up the bowl of soup, lowered her head and started sipping it.

Tian Xin was surprised, she could barely believe her own eyes.

Madam Wang, "You don't mind eating my food?"

Tian SiSi shook her head.

Madam Wang, "If you don't mind me, then you can use my belongings, wear my clothes, whatever I have, I can share with you."

Tian SiSi with her head lowered, "Thank you."

If this was someone else saying this to Lady Tian, she would probably throw a fit. However, she only has appreciation in her heart. Touched, that even her eyes turned red.

Madam Wang smiled again, "See, I don't even your name. I already treat you like a good friend."

Tian SiSi, "My last name is Tian, first name SiSi."

When she came out, she didn't want to use her real name incase her father tracks her whereabouts. But in front of

Madam Wang, she cannot bear to lie.

Madam Wang, “ Tian SiSi... You are not only sweet in person, your name is also sweet. You are a sweet little sister.”

Tian SiSi blushed.

Madam Wang, “Little sister, how old are you?”

Tian SiSi, “Eighteen.”

Madam Wang, “The girls that are eighteen are like flower, but which flower in this world can compare to you?”

Madam Wang, “How old do you think I am?”

Tian SiSi, “I can’t tell.”

Madam Wang, “Take a guess.”

Tian SiSi looked at Madam Wang again.

Her face is pretty like the spring flowers, but more colorful than the flowers.

Tian SiSi, “twenty... , twenty-two? Twenty-three?”

Madam Wang laughed, “You are very sweet even when you talk. I was twenty-three at one point in my life. That was twenty years ago though.”

Tian SiSi was shocked with her eyes popped wide, “Really? I don’t believe you.”

Madam Wang, “I won’t lie to you. I’m not able to lie to you.”

Madam Wang sighed, "I am forty-three this year. Old enough to be your older sister. Is that okay with you?"

Tian SiSi nodded, she is okay with that.

She really wants to be her younger sister, even her daughter.

Tian SiSi shook her head again, "I still can't believe that you are forty-three. I don't think anyone else would believe it either."

Madam Wang, "Maybe other people don't believe it, but I can't make myself not believe it. I can deceive you, deceive everyone in this world, but I don't deceive myself."

Tian SiSi lowered her head, and started to softly let out a sigh.

She felt for the first time in her life, the sorrow of losing one's youth. She also felt the need to cherish youth.

She felt one story closer to Madam Wang.

Madam Wang, "Who's that little sister? Is she related to you?"

Tian SiSi, "She grew up with me. She's like my sister."

Madam Wang, "I m going to steal your sister away from you...Are you mad little sister?"

Tian Xin pouted her lips and became silent.

Tian SiSi give her a glance and said, "She's still a kid, not mature enough to understand."

Madam Wang, "Sometimes not being mature is a good thing. If I can still be a immature child right now, I would

trade anything for it.”

She suddenly let out a laugh, “We should be happy today. Let’s not talk about this right?”

Tian SiSi wanted to answer, but found out when Madam Wang posed this question her eyes didn’t really look at her.

At the same time, someone behind her said, “Wrong.”

His response simple but sharp, like a dagger.

His voice is even sharper, piercing through people’s ears, cutting through people’s hearts.

Tian SiSi couldn’t help but turn her head back.

She found out at the corner of the room there is another person.

A person that doesn’t really look like a person.

When he sat down, he is like a table, a chair, a piece of furniture. It doesn’t move, doesn’t talk, no one will pay attention to him.

However, if you glance at him once, you will never forget.

Tian SiSi glanced at him once, and never wanted to glance at him again.

When she looked at him, it’s like seeing a dull knife, but still able to kill; also like un-dissolvable liquid become black ice.

When she’s not looking at him, she can only think of him in her heart. It’s like a fearful nightmare; also like meeting a ghost from the nightmare.

Who would have thought a person like that would sit in Madam Wang's room.

But he really is sitting here.

Nobody thought this person could even talk.

But he did talk.

He said, "Wrong."

Madam Wang smiled, "Wrong? Why is it wrong?"

This person coldly said, "Because if you are happy, then whatever you say will always be happy."

Madam Wang smiled even more, "That's true, Mr. Ge's sayings seem to be always rational."

Mr. Ge, "Wrong."

Madam Wang, "Wrong again?"

Mr. Ge, "My sayings are always with reason, not seems to be."

Madam Wang, "Little sister, do you guys think Mr. Ge is fun?"

Tian SiSi has her mouth closed. Tian Xin pouted her lips even higher.

They cannot acknowledge that Mr. Ge is fun.

If you can describe this person, "fun" would not be the word.

Madam Wang's notions are different.

Madam Wang, “When you guys see this person, you might think that he is very scary. But when you know him long enough, you will find out that he is a very interesting person.”

Tian SiSi wanted to say something deep down in her heart.

She wanted to ask, “How can you befriend a person such as this for this long?”

If she had to be together with this person, she won’t even survive a day.

The sun outside is leaning west, but to Madam Wang the day is just beginning.

Tian SiSi felt like she had good fortunes today.

She finally rid herself of swindlers that were trying to cheat her. Finally found good people such as Big Brother Zhao and Madam Wang.

These people are like cats, greedy cats.

Madam Wang is like a phoenix.

Now the canary bird flew towards the clouds, not even the evil cats can harm her.

Tian SiSi suddenly felt really tired. She realized that she hasn’t slept in awhile. Her eyes involuntarily saw Madam Wang’s big soft bed...

Chapter 5: The Real Side of Madam Wang

Night arises.

The room is lit. The lighting coming out of the pink cover has a gentle touch to it like the moon light.

The person who lit the room is not here anymore. The room is quiet, Tian SiSi can only hear her own heart pounding uniformly.

She feels her body is weak, too lazy to even move. But she is too thirsty, so she couldn't help but think about the iced lotus soup back at home.

Where's Tian Xin?

Who knows where that little rat went?

Tian SiSi sighed, got out of bed, but the shoes that she just took off were missing.

There it is. She found her expensive clogs.

The clogs are light. When you walk it makes a "Di-ta Da-ta" sound. It's like rain dripping on bamboo leaves.

She likes this sound. She starts to walk for a little bit, then stops. Looking down on her feet, the white socks are already dirty. She takes them off, exposing her fine white feet.

"If it is frost like above a woman's clogs, then it will keep the crows away."

She laughed to herself when she thought of this famous line from a poem.

If there is music, she really wants to perform a traditional Chinese dance.

Opening the window, there really is wavering music in the night wind.

Inside the garden, it is illuminated by bright lights, accentuating the flowers even more.

The nights are definitely lively around here. Madam Wang is a host that loves guests.

Tian SiSi wanted to walk there to look at the guests and share their joy.

“If Qin Ge came to here to visit how great would that be!”

The strong and emotional young man, the flying red handkerchief, Tian SiSi’s face turned red as these thoughts filled her head. Red like the red handkerchief.

In a soothing summer night like that, which young woman wouldn’t feel lustful?

She did not feel Madam Wang’s footsteps.

When she heard Madam Wang’s warming voice, Madam Wang was already next to her.

Madam Wang’s place her hand softly on her shoulder and said, “You are so focused on thinking about something. What are you thinking about?”

Tian SiSi responded, “I’m thinking about where that little brat Tian Xin went.”

She has never lied before.

She never thought she would lie. She never thought the lies would just naturally pour of her mouth. It's like water pouring out of her mouth.

Of course she doesn't understand lying is natural to women. Ever since a woman could talk, she must learn to lie to project herself.

When a person lies for the first time, it's to protect oneself. However, after a person lies multiple times, then that person can understand how to use lies to deceive others.

Madam Wang grabbed her hand, walked by that small rounded table and sat down. She warmly asked, "Did you sleep well?"

Tian SiSi smiled, "I slept like a child that has just been born."

Madam Wang smiled too, "If one sleeps well, then one should be hungry. What do you want to eat?"

Tian SiSi shook her head, "I don't want to eat anything. I want to..."

Excited, Tian SiSi continued saying, "There are a lot of guests today."

Madam Wang, "Not really, only about twenty or so."

Tian SiSi, "You have this many guests everyday?"

Madam Wang, "How can I live if I don't have this many guests."

With her eyes wide and surprised, Tian SiSi, “So do the guests have to bring a gift.”

Madam Wang, “If they want to, I won’t refute it right?”

Tian SiSi, “Where are they from?”

Madam Wang, “All over the place.”

She continued, “There is also a special guest today.”

Tian SiSi’s eyes brightened, “Who? Is it Qin Ge? Is it Liu FengGu?”

Madam Wang, “You know them?”

Tian SiSi with her head down, bit her lip and said, “I don’t know them. However, I really want to meet them. I heard they are big time celebrities.”

Madam Wang laughed, pinched her face and said, “No matter how big the celebrity status, when they see a pretty girl like you, they will turn stupid. If you remember this, you will enjoy a happy life.”

Tian SiSi likes to pinch Tian Xin’s face too, but doesn’t like to be pinched herself.

However, she isn’t mad right now. Instead, she has a warm feeling inside of her.

Madam Wang’s fine finger tips are as smooth as jade.

Someone is knocking on the door.

The person that is knocking on the door is a pretty girl. She brought a few aesthetic looking dishes.

Madam Wang said, "Let's eat here okay? We can quietly eat here. No one will disturb us."

Tian SiSi rolled her eyes and said, "Why can't we go eat with those other guests?"

Madam Wang, "You are not afraid that those people are annoying?"

Tian SiSi lower her head again, "I don't know many people. I've heard people say, the more friends you have the better."

Madam Wang laughed and said, "I think you want to know more people so you can pick out a husband right?"

She smiled tenderly and pinched Tian SiSi's face again.

Tian SiSi's face is burning.

Madam Wang stuck her face onto Tian SiSi's face and said, "I have friends coming in here everyday. You can get to know anyone you want. But, you are mine tonight."

Her face is cold and smooth at the same time.

Tian SiSi did not like her actions, but didn't want to avoid her.

"Everyone is female, what is there to worry about?"

But for some strange reason, her heart stopped beating faster.

No one has touched her face before. No one was this intimate with her before.

Not even Tian Xin.

Tian SiSi suddenly said, "Where's Tian Xin? How come I don't see her?"

Madam Wang, "She is sleeping."

She smiled, "Besides you, no one has ever slept in my room. And no one even dared to sleep in my bed."

Tian SiSi's heart is even warmer now, showing even more affection.

For some reason, her face became hotter too.

Madam Wang, "Do you feel hot? Let me take off your shirt for you."

Tian SiSi, "I really don't feel hot."

Madam Wang, "Even if you don't feel hot, you still have to take it off. If other people see you wearing these male clothing, they might think there is a man in my room. I can't let that happen."

She is already reaching for Tian SiSi's shirt button while speaking.

Her hands are like a snake, gliding over Tian SiSi's wrist, and gliding over her chest.

Tian SiSi couldn't just sit still anymore.

She feels really itchy.

While gasping, and letting out a charming smile, she said, "You can't take off my shirt. I'm not wearing anything inside."

Madam Wang let out a strange smile, "What's the matter with that? Are you afraid of me?"

Tian SiSi, "I'm not afraid, but..."

Her hand suddenly moved up to Madam Wang's chest.

She jumped, shaken in her body, and shared at Madam Wang, with a quavering voice, "Are you a female or male?"

Madam Wang, "What do you think?"

Tian SiSi, "You... You... You..."

She can't say.

Is that because she can't tell Madam Wang is male or female?

No matter who sees Madam Wang, they wouldn't think that she would be a man.

Even a retarded person won't think that.

But her chest...

Her chest is as flat as a mirror.

Madam Wang, "You can't see?"

Tian SiSi, "I...I...I..."

Madam Wang, "It's okay if you can't see. You'll know the truth tomorrow morning."

Tian SiSi backed away, and said, "I don't want to know. I'm going to leave."

She suddenly turned her head trying to dash out.

But there's no door in the back.

When she's back again, Madam Wang already blocked her way and said, "How can you leave now?"

Tian SiSi irritated, screamed, "Why can't I go? I didn't sell myself to you!"

Madam Wang responded, "Who said you didn't get sold to me?"

Tian SiSi terrified, "Who said I got sold to you."

Madam Wang, "I said because I already gave Big Brother Zhao seven hundred silver taels."

She laughed and continued, "You are of course worth more than seven hundred silver taels. But he only dared to ask for this much. However, even if he wanted seven thousand taels, I still would have paid him."

Tian SiSi's face turned white from her anger, "You said Big Brother sold me to you?"

Madam Wang, "He sold you from top to bottom."

Tian SiSi now shaking from anger said, "Who the hell is he? He can't just sell me to you."

Madam Wang, "Well he can sell you because you are a ignorant person that didn't even know that you were being sold. As soon as you stepped into this city, they have already targeted you."

Tian SiSi, "Them?"

Madam Wang, "They are Tie GeBo, Knife Scar Six, the heavily beard man, and Big Brother Zhao."

Tian SiSi, "So they colluded together?"

Madam Wang, "You are correct. The mastermind behind this plan is the person that you treat as friend, Big Brother Zhao. He not only wants your money, but your body as well."

She laughed and said, "You are lucky to have met me. You are pretty lucky. If you obey my orders, I won't treat you unfairly; I won't make you greet guests either."

Tian SiSi, "Greet guests? What does that mean?"

Her anger is ready to explode, but she is trying to hold it back because there are many things that she still does not understand.

Madam Wang, "You silly, don't even know what greet guests mean. That's okay I can slowly teach you. We will start tonight."

She slowly walked towards her.

While talking, something is already protruding below "her" belt.

Tian SiSi's face turned red again, "You are a male?"

Madam Wang, "Sometimes a male, sometimes a female too. Therefore, it is your luck that you can meet someone like me."

Tian SiSi suddenly wanted to throw up.

When she thought about the places that Madam Wang felt with her hands, she itched to cut the meat out of those places.

Madam Wang is still smiling, "Let's have a drink first, then slowly..."

Tian SiSi suddenly screamed.

She screamed charges with both hands.

Lady Tian sometimes gentle like a canary bird, sometimes fierce like a tiger.

Her hands ordinarily look weak, smooth as shallot, but now it has turned into a pair of tiger claws, able to clutch Madam Wang's throat.

Her move not only fierce, but fast, and with variations.

Inside the Jin Xiu fortress, there are a lot of top level fighters. Everyone said Ms. Tian's martial arts can compare with the top fighters.

The armed escort from Beijing was taken down by her in one move. When he got knocked down, he couldn't get up for a very very long time.

The move is one of Lady Tian's favorite moves.

She is completely sick of this weirdo Madam Wang. This move is a lot more forceful than the one that she took down the Beijing escort with. If Madam Wang gets knocked down, she may never be able to get up again.

Madam Wang didn't get knocked down.

The one that got knocked down was Lady Tian.

She has never been knocked down by others.

A person that has never been knocked down before is very hard to realize what it feels like to be knocked down.

She first felt like the hand that she used to strike was seized, which caused her to lose balance. Suddenly felt a floating feeling.

Then she heard her body fall on the ground.

After that she lost all her feelings. She became empty. The blood from her whole body rushed to her head, stuffing her head like a piece of wood.

When she gained feelings again, Madam Wang is smiling at her. A smile that is so gentle, so affable, she said, "Does it hurt?"

Of course it hurts.

She finally felt pain. Pain that would cause her joints to disperse open, pain that makes her see stars in front of her, pain that caused tears to slowly jerk out.

Madam Wang shook her head, "It's a surprise that someone with martial arts skills like you would even dare to try to hurt others."

Tian SiSi, "My martial arts is really bad?"

At this moment, it is surprising that she asked such question.

Madam Wang was shocked, "Do you know how bad your martial arts skills are?"

Tian SiSi doesn't know.

She always thought she was considered to be one of the top fighters of the wuxia realm.

Now she knows. Others praised her skills because she was "Second Master" Tian's daughters.

This feeling is like falling from the highest buildings. This fall hurts even more than the previous fall.

She felt for the first time that she wasn't as smart and as talented as she thought she was.

She really wanted to slap herself on the face a couple of times.

Madam Wang looked at her with a smile, said, "What are you thinking about?"

Tian SiSi bit her lips, didn't say anything.

Madam Wang, "Do you realize that I can rape you at anytime. You are not afraid?"

Tian SiSi's body contracted, and began to shake.

Because up until now, she never thought about how frightful, how serious this situation was. She was still very confused on this situation.

She didn't even know what trepidation was.

But the word rape is like a knife. It cut open her dazed concept. Fear jumped out like an egg without shells.

Rape.

This word is too scary, too sharp.

She has never heard of this word before. Never even thought about it.

She felt the goose bumps coming out of her skin. Every goose bump filled with cold sweat. Her whole body burning like someone with a fever.

She screamed, "I'll give you back the seven hundred silvertaels. I'll multiply it by ten times."

Madam Wang, "You have it?"

Tian SiSi, "Although I don't have it now, if you let me go I will give it to you within two days."

Madam Wang smiled and shook her head.

Tian SiSi, "You don't believe you? I can guarantee it, if you know I am the daughter of..."

Madam Wang cut her off and said, "I don't want to know. I don't want you to give back my money nor find someone to seek revenge."

Tian SiSi, "I won't seek revenge. Never. If you let me go, I will be thankful for my whole life."

Madam Wang, "I don't want you to thank me. I want..."

She stopped her voice and didn't continue.

But sometimes not speaking is scarier than speaking.

Tian SiSi's body already rolled into a ball and said, "You really have to rape me?"

Never in her wildest dreams, would she think she would say that word. After saying it her face felt like a fire was burning.

Madam Wang, "I don't want to rape you."

Tian SiSi, "Then what do you want to do?"

Madam Wang, "I want you to willingly obey me. And I know you will willingly obey me."

Tian SiSi screamed, "Never, even if I die."

Madam Wang, “You think dying is easy? Then you are completely wrong.”

There is a gold bell on the table.

She grabbed the bell and shook it.

When the bell rang, two people walked in.

These two people simply cannot be considered to be human. One looks at a bear, another like an ape.

Madam Wang smiled and said, “What do you think about these two guys?”

Tian SiSi shut her eyes, too afraid to even look.

Madam Wang, “If you don’t obey me, I will ask these two guys to rape you.”

Tian SiSi screamed again.

This time she used all of her energy to scream.

After the scream, she fainted.

It’s not a bad thing if a person can faint at the right time.

However, those that fainted will wake up.

When Tian SiSi woke up this time, she wasn’t as fortunate as last time.

She didn’t hear her own heart beat nor did she hear gentle music.

She heard moaning sounds even more miserable than crying.

Cuddled up in a corner, the eeriness light illuminated on her.

The pink gown that person had on was completely torn. It showed a body that was bruised up from beatings. A lot of the places started to gush out blood as well.

Tian SiSi felt this gown looks really familiar. She immediately thought of the girl that was traumatized and sent to her room by Sister Mei.

She wanted to stand up, but she couldn't. She wouldn't even feel the pain. Her body felt numb.

She can only struggle to crawl over.

That girl suddenly lifted up her head, and stared at her. A pair of eyes filled with red veins, she looks like someone that has been tortured into a crazy animal.

Tian SiSi's was shocked.

What shocked her wasn't these pair of eyes, but the face.

When she saw this girl during the day, her face looked pretty, comely, but now it's all distorted. Her nose was moved by two inches, the corner of her eyes and mouth bleeding, and the face book like a watermelon that was broken.

Tian SiSi wanted to cry and wanted to vomit.

She wanted to hold it back, but her stomach already contracted like a bow, and finally vomited.

The vomit was sour and bitter.

This girl coldly stared at her. A pair of eyes became cold and blank, no longer showing pain and fear.

When she was done vomiting, the girl suddenly said, "Madam Wang wanted me to ask you something."

Tian SiSi, "She wants you to ask me?"

Girl, "She wanted me to ask you whether you want to look like me?"

Her voice did not convey any feelings. It doesn't sound like something that would come out of her mouth.

No one thought she would ask this question.

But it's really is her asking the question.

The question coming from her mouth is a lot scarier than coming from Madam Wang.

Tian SiSi, "You... How did you become like this?"

Girl, "Because I didn't listen to Madam Wang. If you copy my actions, you will be just like me."

Her voice is calm and cold, it's like she is describing another person's befall.

She has already turned into a talking machine.

A person turns like this only when their pain has reached zenith, fear has reached the limit, and when they are completely hopeless.

Tian SiSi realized what fear was when looking at her.

She suddenly lied on the ground and started crying.

She is almost hopeless.

The girl is still looking at her with a cold stare and said, "Did you already agree?"

Tian SiSi pulled her hair and said, "I don't know...I don't know."

Girl calmly said, "If you don't know then that means you have agreed. You should have agreed"

Tian SiSi suddenly rushed over by her side, and said, "Why did you stop talking?"

Girl, "I already said what I had to say."

Tian SiSi, "Why don't you think of a way to escape?"

Girl, "There's no way."

Tian SiSi pulled on her hair forcefully and loudly said, "There must be a way. You can't just wait here to die."

The girl's head got dragged up, looked at Tian SiSi and her face suddenly showed a special type of smile and said, "Why can't I wait to for me to die? I can die, I am much better off than you. You will understand, death, isn't scary, the scary thing is wanting to die but can't."

Tian SiSi's hand slowly let go.

Her hand turned ice cold.

As soon as she let go, this girl put her head down, lied on the floor like someone that never wants to see anyone or anything on this world ever again.

Is life really this vapid?

Tian SiSi bit her teeth, and stood up.

Tian SiSi swore she will live. No matter what, she will live.

She refuses to die!

There a flambeau on the wall.

The flame is almost exhausted, giving it a gloomy feel.

The gloomy light shined on the swarthy wall. The wall is build by stones, with each stones weighing two hundred to three hundred pounds.

What about door?

There is no door.

There is only a small window.

The window is forty or fifty feet away from ground with a width less than 2 feet.

The room is so high. The window is so small.

Tian SiSi knew she can't jump that high. However, she still wanted to try.

She used all of her strength and jumped up.

She fell, so she climbed.

Every stone is tightly put together. She forcibly pulled from the stone slots slowly climbing up.

Her hands started to bleed. The coarse stones were sharp like knives.

The bleed gushed out her hands, the pain bore into her heart.

She fell again, even harder this time.

She is longer letting out tears.

An interesting matter is when a person is bleeding, they usually don't let out any tears.

She decided to try again, going to keep trying until she dies.

At the time, she discovered that a rope was hanging down from the window.

Someone is trying to save her!

Who's trying to save her? Why save her?

She didn't even think because she didn't have time.

She forcibly tapped that girl wanting her to see the rope.

The girl looked up for a second and said, "I don't want to leave. I rather die."

Only looked up once, and said one thing.

Tian SiSi stomped her feet, grabbed onto the rope and climbed up.

Her slim body was just barely able to crawl out of the window.

There was no one outside. The rope was tied to a tree from the window across.

Tian SiSi climbed over, slide down the tree trunk.

It's pitch black everywhere, which road will enable her to escape?

She doesn't know and can't choose.

Facing her is a flower forest, she doesn't know what flower. She only smelled the fragrance, so she went in.

She immediately heard the sound of joy coming from the wind, then approached the light in front of her.

The gentle light is from the window. The cheerful sound is even more gentle than the light. The sound even has a interlude of laughter.

Go backwards? Or go around the house?

Tian SiSi hid behind a tree. Just when she didn't know which route to take, two people emerged from the house.

When she saw these two people, Tian SiSi's stopped breathing.

On the left is a charming person with a smile like flower. That person is Madam Wang.

On the right is a up straight person, cool and natural. That is of course the philanthropist, The "Second Master" Tian Bai Shi.

So the special guest that Madam Wang has been talking about is him.

Not even in her dreams would Tian SiSi thought she would meet her dad at this place and under these circumstances.

She almost cried out loud with feelings of joy.

She didn't scream out loud. At this time two more people emerged behind her dad.

One is old and one is young.

The old one is short and chubby, with a round fair, nearly bald, and without much facial hair. There is a long sword hanging from his wrist. The sword is twice as long as his legs, making him extremely funny looking.

The younger one looks even shorter and chubbier than the older one. He looks even funnier. It's always funny when a young person looks chubby. He probably either eats too much, is too lazy, too thickheaded, sleeps too much or uses his head too little. Maybe he has a little bit of each of these traits.

Tian SiSi knows this older person is one of her dad's good friends. He is "Third Master" Yang from the "famous" manor.

What about the young one?

Is he "Third Master" Yang's precious son Yang Fan?

"Dad wanted me to marry him?"

Tian SiSi's face turned red from anger. She would rather marry Wang DaGuang than this pig.

She decided not to meet her dad.

It will be too embarrassing if I just run out like this.

Madam Wang laughed, "It's late, why don't you stay "Second Master" Tian?"

"Second Master" Tian, "I can't. I have an urgent thing that I have to do. I need to find someone."

Madam Wang, "Who are you trying to find? Maybe I can help... There are a lot of people that come and go around here."

“Second Master” Tian smiled and said, “You won’t be able to find this person. This person won’t come to a place like this.”

He sighed then said, “Even I don’t know where to find this person. But no matter where, even to the ends of the earth, I will find this person.”

The person that he wants to find is his fond and only daughter.

Tian SiSi’s throat suddenly got stuffed.

She finally realized, in this world only her dad really care for her and love her.

This is already enough. She already doesn’t care about other matters.

She wanted to charge out, regardless of what happens; charge into her dad’s arms.

If she can charge into her dad’s arms, everything will be solved. Her dad will retaliate for her to get even with what she went.

Too bad she didn’t have a chance to rush out.

Suddenly a pair of hands stuck out behind her, and covered her mouth. The hand is rough, big and powerful.

With these hands covering Tian SiSi’s mouth, she not only can’t scream, she could barely breath.

This person of course only has two hands. His other hand clinching onto Tian SiSi, Tian SiSi could barely move. She can only use her feet to kick back. Kicking the leg of a person like that is like kicking a rock.

The harder she kicks the more pain she feels in her feet.

This person held her up like carrying little chicken, backing up.

Tian SiSi can only look, as she gets further and further away from her dad. Finally she can't even see him anymore; maybe she won't see him ever again.

When her tears started to come down, this person already turned around to rush out. His strides are huge. With every stride covering four or five feet, they rushed out of the flower forest.

Other the forest, it is also very dark. This person kept on going. After two or three turns, they suddenly went in a stone house.

The ceiling of this house is high, the room is big. There is a bed, table and chair inside.

The bed is huge, the chair is also huge. The chair is larger than a regular table. The table is larger than a regular bed.

This person closed the door, then put Tian SiSi on the bed.

Tian SiSi finally saw his face.

She almost fainted again.

Chapter 6: The Pink Falchion

The person isn't human, but an ape. The ape that Madam Wang asked to rape Tian SiSi with.

Although his face still resemble that of a human, but it is filled with hair. The hair isn't very long, but every strand is couple inches long. It's not bad looking when with he's not smiling, but when he smiles all the hair on his face starts to move.

That appearance is something that we won't even see in your nightmares.

He is smiling, smiling at Tian SiSi.

Tian SiSi's bones chilled, jumped up with all her powers, and tried to strike him in the nose.

She heard the softest part in an ape is his nose.

She couldn't hit his nose.

This person just moved his hand, like trying to get rid of a mosquito, Tian SiSi already fell to the floor.

She would rather get beaten to death, but unluckily she's still alive.

When she's alive, she has to face this person. Don't want to look, too scared to look, but she has no choice but to look.

This person is still smiling and said, "Don't be afraid, I'm here to save you."

This person spoke like a human, but his voice doesn't seem like it's from a human.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, "You... You are here to save me?"

The person smiled gain, and got something out.

He got out a circle of rope. It's the same rope that Tian SiSi used to escape from the window.

Tian SiSi was shocked, "You were the one who put the rope there?"

The person nodded, "Who else would it be?"

Tian SiSi even more shocked, "Why did you save me?"

The person, "Because you are cute, I like you"

Tian SiSi's body contracted again, contracted into a ball.

She saw this person's hairy hand extend over trying to touch her face.

She immediately started to scream, "Go away! Get away! If you touch me, I'm going to die."

The person took his hand back and said, "You're afraid of me? Why are you afraid of me?"

A glimpse of sadness started to show in those eyes hidden by the hair.

This made him more like a human.

But this made Tian SiSi's more afraid, she wanted to throw up.

The nicer the person is to her, the sicker she feels. She was itching to die.

The person, "Although I am ugly, but I am not a bad person. I don't have ill intentions towards you. But I want too..."

Tian SiSi, "You want what?"

The person lowered his head and said, "I don't want much, as long as I can see you then I am happy."

He was a fearing wild animal, now he is a pitiful beast.

Tian SiSi stared at him.

She feels he is no longer fearing, only sick, very sick.

She suddenly blinked and said, "What's your name?"

When she asked this question, she is already treating this person like a human.

This person's eyes showed a sign of joy and said, "QiQi, my name is QiQi."

"QiQi" what kind of name is that?

No one would have a name like that.

Tian SiSi inquired, "Are you human?"

When she asked this question, she felt nervous inside. She didn't know if it would set this person in anger.

QiQi's eyes was instantly filled with anger, but after a while he calmed himself and said, "Of course I am human just like you. I became like this because of Madam Wang."

If a person can answer these questions honestly, then this person definitely isn't a dangerous person.

Tian SiSi feeling more confident now, “How did she harm you?”

QiQi’s clinched his fist, his joints made a cracking noise, after a while with his rattling voice, “Blood, poison, blood... She forced to drink poisonous blood everyday. She wanted me to become a monster so I can scare people.”

He looked up at Tian SiSi, signs of sorrow showed in his eyes, “But I am a person. She can change my appearance, but not my heart.”

Tian SiSi, “Do you hate her?”

QiQi didn’t answer, he didn’t have to.

He’s clinched his fist harder, it’s like he is pinching Madam Wang’s neck.

Tian SiSi, “If you hate her then why don’t you find a way to kill her?”

QiQi’s body suddenly shrunk, even his started to shake.

Tian SiSi sneered, “So you are afraid of her.”

QiQi bite his teeth, “She’s not human... She is the real monster.”

Tian SiSi, “If you are so afraid of her, why did you save me?”

QiQi, “Because... Because I like you.”

Tian SiSi bit her lips, “If you want to treat me well, then kill her for me.”

QiQi shook his head again and again.

Tian SiSi sneered, "Even you are afraid to kill her, at least let me go."

QiQi shook his head again, "No, there's no way you can escape by yourself."

Tian SiSi sneered, "Even if you are human, then you are a useless human. No one is going to like you."

QiQi's face turned red, suddenly looked up and said loudly, "But I can help you escape."

Tian ShiShi, "Really?"

QiQi, "Although I am human, but unlike other people I don't lie."

Tian ShiShi, "But I cannot leave by myself."

QiQi, "Why?"

Tian ShiShi, "My sister is still here, I cannot leave her."

She suddenly winked, "If you can save her, maybe she will be nice to you."

QiQi's eyes showed signs of joy, "What kind of person is she?"

Tian ShiShi, "She is a pretty girl. Her small mouth is usually pouted, her name is Tian Xin."

QiQi, "Ok, I will go find her...I can definitely save her."

The sentence wasn't even completed when he got to the door. He turned around and looked at Tian SiSi, "You... Will you leave?"

Tian SiSi, "No, I will wait for you."

QiQi suddenly charged back, kneeled in front of her, kissed her feet and charged out with joy.

Tian SiSi became soft after he charged out. She looked at her feet that had been kissed, she wanted to cut it off.

She couldn't even believe herself how she just said those words.

Now she wants to throw up.

Suddenly a person sneered, "It unbelievable that out of these guys, Ms. Tian would chose such a person. What insight, what vision."

Tian SiSi looked up and found out Mr. Ge is already sitting on the windowsill.

He is sitting there without any moments at all, it's like he became a part of the window.

It's like even before the window was made, he was already sitting there.

Tian SiSi's face became red, and shouted, "What did you say?"

Mr. Ge, "I said he really likes you. You treat him pretty well too. You guys are a match from heaven."

There is a big teapot on top of the table.

Tian SiSi suddenly jumped, took the teapot and threw it towards him.

It seems like Mr. Ge didn't even see the teapot, he waited until the teapot flew in front of him then lightly blew a stream of air on it.

The teapot suddenly turned around, slowly flew back, and placidly landed on the table. Somehow it landed at the same spot.

Tian SiSi's eyes became shocked.

"Does this person know magic?"

If this is martial arts, then she has not seen it before nor heard about it.

Mr. Ge's facial expressions are still calm, "I've always liked to help somebody help. You guys are a match from heaven. I will definitely ask Madam Wang to have you marry him."

He continued, "You know Madam Wang always listens to me."

Tian SiSi bursts in a scream, "You can't do that!"

Mr. Ge sneered, "I am going to do it and what are you going to do about it?"

Tian SiSi wanted to stand up but flapped on the ground and her body started to shiver.

She knows when somebody like Mr. Ge says something, he will do what he says.

She suddenly turns and tries to hit her head onto the wall. The wall is made up of solid rocks, if you hit it, not only will your head bleed, it will probably become two or three pieces.

She would rather be dead and done with.

She didn't die.

When she hit her head, the solid rock wall suddenly became soft.

She fell face forward and found out that she hit her head on Mr. Ge's stomach.

Mr. Ge glued himself onto the wall, and it's like his body became apart of the wall.

It was like he was there before the wall was even built.

He stood there motionless, still no expression from his face, "Even if you didn't agree, you didn't have to die."

Tian SiSi clenches her teeth, tears pouring down.

Mr. Ge, "If you don't want to marry him, then I have a solution."

Tian SiSi couldn't help but ask, "What solution?"

Mr. Ge, "Kill him!"

Tian SiSi terrified, "Kill him?"

Mr. Ge, "No one can force you to marry a dead man right?"

Tian SiSi, "I...I can kill him."

Mr. Ge, "Of course you can, because he likes you, that's why you can kill him."

What he is said is interesting.

A woman can hurt you only when you truly love her.

The majority of the woman can only hurt the man who loves her.

Tian SiSi lowered her head and stared at her hand.

There is a falchion next to her hand.

A falchion that is out of its scabbard.

The falchion has a strange color. It's pink, like a young woman's veil.

Mr. Ge, "This is a good falchion, it is extremely sharp, it can kill when it sees blood."

He continued on slowly, "Every good falchion has a name, this falchion's name is called woman."

The falchion's name is called "woman", that is indeed very strange.

Mr. Ge, "Because it is sharp like a woman's mouth, poisonous like a woman's heart. There is no better sword than this to kill a man that likes you."

Tian SiSi reached out, wanted to seize the falchion, but drew back.

Mr. Ge, "He is almost back. Marry him or kill him it's up to you, I won't force you..."

After saying the last sentence, his voice was already fading.

Tian SiSi looked up and found out that this demon like person is no where to be found.

He is like a demon.

Because he lures and doesn't force.

From a woman's point of view, temptation is always harder to resist than force.

Tian SiSi reached out again, but retracted again.

She took the falchion and hid it behind her back when her heard sounds of footsteps outside the door.

QiQi charged in.

He came back by himself, looked at Tian SiSi, joy filled his eyes and he walked over in jubilation, "You didn't leave, you waited for me."

Tian SiSi avoided his gaze, "Where's Tian Xin?"

QiQi, "I can't find her because..."

Tian SiSi didn't didn't let him finish this sentence.

The falchion already penetrated into his chest, pierced into his heart.

QiQi was stunned, suddenly in frenzy and grabbed Tian SiSi's throat, and shouted, "Why did you kill me? What did I do wrong?"

Tian SiSi couldn't respond and couldn't move.

If QiQi uses the slightest of force, her neck would snap like straw.

She is already frightened to death.

She knows QiQi will not forgive her this time. No one will forgive her!

However, QiQi's hand slowly let go.

The anger started to fade in his eyes. The only thing that left is sorrow and pain, the pain of being hopeless.

He stared at Tian SiSi and said, "You should have killed me, I don't blame you... I don't blame you..."

"I don't blame you." He repeated these four words over and over. His voice gradually started getting weaker and weaker, his face started to contort and finally that pair of eyes slowly became dead.

He slowly fell.

While he was falling down, his eyes was still fixed on Tian SiSi, struggling to say the words, "I couldn't find your friend because she already escaped... I did try to find her. I didn't lie to you."

After saying these words, he died.

He died calmly because he didn't lie to anyone, nor did he do anything nefarious deeds.

He had a clear conscious when he died.

Tian SiSi stood there lethargically, and found out that all of her clothe is wet.

"I won't blame you... I didn't lie to you..."

He definitely didn't lie.

But she lied to him, used him and even killed him.

What did he do wrong?

"Dang", the falchion dropped on the ground.

Tears?

Where are the tears? Is it because there are no more tears?

Suddenly someone said, "Did you know that he could have killed you at any moment during that time?"

Mr. Ge came out of nowhere all of a sudden.

Tian SiSi didn't want to look at him and said, "I know."

Mr. Ge, "He didn't kill you because he really loves you. You were able to kill him because he really loves you."

His sounded like it was coming from a distance and slowly said, "He loves you, that the only mistake he make."

Was he really wrong?

If a person falls in love with someone that he or she shouldn't have, then that is definitely a scary mistake.

This mistake cannot be excused.

But Tian SiSi's tears all of a sudden started to pour out.

She never thought she would shed tears for this kind of person, but she already did.

Then she suddenly heard a voice that is gentle and Sister Mei like "Go back, the guests are gone, Madam Wang is waiting for you, hurry and go back."

When she heard the name "Madam Wang", Tian SiSi felt like she just got whipped.

Her body immediately shrunk, and with a quavering voice, "I won't go back."

Sister Mei's smile is still gentle and friendly, said, "How can you not go back? You want me to carry you back?"

Tian SiSi, "Please, let me go..."

Sister Mei, "You can't go. You are already here, no one can leave."

Mr. Ge suddenly said, "If you really want to leave, I have a solution."

Tian SiSi ecstatic, asked, "What solution?"

She knows Mr. Ge's solution will work for sure.

Mr. Ge, "If you agree to one thing then I will let you go."

Tian SiSi, "Agree to what?"

Mr. Ge, "Agree to marry me."

Sister Mei started to laugh, "Mr. Ge you must be kidding."

Mr. Ge, "You really think I'm kidding?"

Sister Mei's smile became reluctant, "Even if Mr. Ge agrees, I am not going to agree."

Mr. Ge, "Then I will have to kill you."

Sister Mei's is still smiling but the smile is even more forced, "But Madam Wang..."

When Tian SiSi heard the name "Madam Wang", Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and screamed, "I agree!"

After these words, Sister Mei already collapsed.

She is still smiling.

When she was smiling, the corner of her eye and forehead were filled with wrinkles.

Blood started to flow along the wrinkles on her face.

Her gentle and friendly face turned scarier than a demon.

Tian SiSi's teeth trembled, slowly turned back.

Mr. Ge disappeared again.

She no longer worried about anything else, didn't look back again and charged out of the door.

In front the corner of the wall.

Near the corner is a door.

The door was open.

Tian SiSi charged in.

She isn't looking at anything or thinking about anything. She just kept running forward.

It's deep into the night.

It's dark all around.

She couldn't see anything.

But if she stops, she would appear to see Mr. Ge's shady, cold and stern face in the dark.

So she can only continue to run, without knowing the road or direction.

She finally fell down.

The place where she fell down has a monument.

Right after she fell, someone said with a cold voice, "You are here? I am waiting for you."

It was Mr. Ge's voice.

Mr. Ge was already sitting on the monument, appearing to be apart of it.

It was as if he was here sitting here even before the monument was even built.

This isn't an illusion, this definitely is Mr. Ge.

Tian SiSi was almost scared to death, "You are waiting for me? Why are you waiting for me?"

Mr. Ge, "I have something to ask you."

Tian SiSi, "What do you want to ask me?"

Mr. Ge, "When are you going to marry me?"

Tian SiSi screamed, "Who said I was going to marry you?"

Mr. Ge, "You said it yourself, you already agreed to it."

Tian SiSi, "I didn't say it, I didn't agree..."

She screamed and ran away.

Fear gave her another extra burst of energy.

She rushed out, after running a long distance, she finally looked back.

Everything is dark behind her. Mr. Ge didn't chase after her.

Tian SiSi took a breath, and felt she couldn't hold herself up anymore and fell down again.

The place she fell this time has an incline.

She couldn't help herself and rowed down the incline into a shallow den.

A rabbit hole?

A fox's den?

A snake's den?

Tian SiSi no longer cared, didn't matter whether it was fox or snake. Nothing was worse than Mr. Ge.

This person is craftier than a fox and scarier than a snake.

Tian SiSi prayed that Mr. Ge wouldn't appear again. Regardless of what will be asked of her, she would do it without any regrets.

Her prayers somehow worked.

It has been a long time and Mr. Ge was still nowhere to be found.

The stars are fading.

The long night is almost over. This day is finally over.

Tian SiSi took a deep breath, and felt her body was about to collapse.

She couldn't help but ask herself, "What did I do today?"

This day seemed longer than her eighteen years of life.

This day she lied and got lied to.

She even killed.

The person that lied to her is who she trusted. Everyone who lied to her, she trusted.

The only person who didn't lie to her and treated her well was killed by her. She finally understood you wouldn't judge a person's heart by appearance.

"What did I do?"

"What kind of person am I?"

Tian SiSi's heart was wrenched, her whole body was wrenched. It's like an invisible rope that is whipping her constantly.

"Maybe this is life? Is this just life?"

"Does a person have to live like this?"

She doubts it, she doesn't understand.

She doesn't understand that life has a lot of unfair things, unfair tribulations.

Only when you accept them can you become a real individual.

When a person lives, one must be able to tolerate.

Tolerance has another meaning and that is to fight!

Continue to tolerate is continuing to fight—or else your life would have no meaning.

Life molds itself from tribulations.

Stars fades there is sign of light in the east.

Tian SiSi believes she grew up a lot.

Whatever she did, right or wrong? She finally tasted the true meaning of life.

Even if she did wrong, she should have forgiven. She didn't do it willingly.

It wasn't a day in which she wasted.

She grew up a lot, no longer a kid.

She is already a woman. A real woman, a woman that this world needs.

She lived for eighteen years, only until day did she realize her existence.

The happiness and sorrow that is apart of this world is apart of her now.

Whether it is happiness or sorrow, she must accept it no matter what.

Chapter 7: A Young Lady and a Pig

One

Light of the early dawn appeared in the East.

Tian SiSi's eyes were still bleary, she tried to keep it open, but eventually she closed it again.

She was really too tired, too weary.

Although she knew that she could not fall asleep here, she could not prevent herself.

While being half asleep, she heard some people calling, "Young lady, Lady Tian"

Who was calling?

This sound was very familiar.

Tian SiSi opened her eyes, as the call went nearer. She raised her head.

A row of four people walked here. The first one was Tie GeBo, next Knife Scar Six, Qian YiTao, and Boss Zhao.

Seeing these four people, Tian SiSi felt her anger welled up.

If not for these four bastards, how could she fall to the present situation.

But why were they looking for her? Had they not deceived her enough, that they wanted to deceive her again?

Tian SiSi jumped up, her hands on the waist, staring at them.

Perhaps she feared Madam Wang and Mr. Ge, but to these four swindlers, Lady Tian was actually really angry.

She was Second Master Tian's daughter after all, the head of the big escort bureau from the capital city.

Perhaps her wugong was not as high as she imagined it to be, but she had some actual skills.

When these four people saw her, they unexpectedly did not run away, instead they were smiling and approached with reverence.

Tian SiSi stared at them, "What do you want?"

Qian YiTao's smiling face looked very natural, as he said with a smile, "The inferior is looking for Lady Tian."

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, "You dare to look for me? Your courage is actually not small ha..."

Qian YiTao knelt down suddenly, and said, "The humble one did not know young lady's background and had offended deeply, but hopefully the young lady can forgive us."

When he knelt down, the other three people immediately also knelt down.

Boss Zhao placed down two bundles and said, "This package is young lady's jewelry and this package is 700 silver taels, if the young lady can overlook what had happened before and accept this bundles, the humble one would be deeply grateful."

These people suddenly became conscientious and was willing to return everything and submit.

On the contrary, Tian SiSi felt a little embarrassed.

Feeling embarrassed within but also a little self-satisfied, she put on a serious face and said, "You all realize your mistakes?"

Four people simultaneously shouted back, "The humble ones know our sins, the humble ones should die"

Tian SiSi's heart became soft and wanted to tell them to stand up. The picture of four male adults kneeling in front of her was not a pretty one.

Who knew that when these four people spoke “die”, suddenly there were many holes on their foreheads.

The blood flowed immediately from the holes, the wrinkled smiles faded gradually.

Four people’s eyes still looked straight but the faces were already stiff, no shout, no struggle.

Eight eyes were still looking straight at Tian SiSi, until their faces suddenly dropped to the ground.

Tian SiSi was scared.

She simply did not see how the holes came up, she just saw these four turn-to-ugly faces from four smiling faces.

Who killed them? With what method?

Tian SiSi remembered Sister Mei’s death and her hands and feet immediately became ice-cold.

Mr. Ge!

Tian SiSi screamed, and turned around.

There was no one behind her, only a tree that could not stop shaking in the cold wind.

When she turned around again, Mr. Ge was already behind the four corpses, coldly staring at her, his long robe looked like mourning clothes in the dim light.

His cold face was entirely still, with his straight body staying motionless.

He also looked like a dead person.

Tian SiSi’s soul flew with fright and stuttered, “YouWhat are you doing here?”

Mr. Ge lightly said, “I want to ask you.”

Tian Sisi said, “What question?”

Mr. Ge said, “When do you plan to marry me?”

It was a similar question, similar words, while the intonation and the expression almost did not change.

Tian SiSi did not know what to do, how to answer this stupid question.

She was confused.

Because she was really too anxious, that she could not control herself.

Mr. Ge said, "I told these four people to come."

Tian SiSi nodded, "II know."

Mr. Ge said, "Since they have deceived you, why don't you want these back?"

Tian SiSi was nodding all the time and said, "I do not want them, I do not want them at all."

She nodded while at the same time she said she did not want them, that was sad but also laughable.

Mr. Ge did not show any expression, and said lightly, "You do not want them, but I do."

He lifted the bundles and then said slowly, "This is your wedding dowry."

Tian SiSi screamed, said, "If you want anything, I will give you... I have a lot more jewelry which is worth much more than these, I will give them all to you, as long as you do not force me to marry you."

Mr. Ge coldly said, "You certainly must marry me, you have promised me."

Tian SiSi tried to look up to see him.

But she probably should not look at him directly.

Because when she did that, her whole body felt like it had dropped into the icehouse.

His face did not show any smile, nor any blood.
But his face was even more fearful than the bloody smiling face of that four dead people.

Tian SiSi screamed, "I never promised youI have never really promised you"

She screamed while turning around to run away.
She felt that her body was disobeying her – that she could not take another step, but it was as if she suddenly got the strength from the devil, because in one breath, she had run away really, really far.

There was no sound behind her.
She finally dared to turn her head and glance behind secretly.

The wind was blowing, but there was nobody.

Unexpectedly Mr. Ge had not pursued her.
He did not pursue her anxiously, maybe because he calculated that Tian SiSi would not be able to escape anyway.

Without pursuing her, wherever he was, his overbearing shadow had put a stranglehold on Tian Sisi.

Tian SiSi dropped down.
She collapsed next to the road.

The milky color of the early morning fog rose from the road and scattered in all directions.

From the smog, there was a faint sound of rattling wheels mixed with some gentle neighs.

Also a low voice of someone humming a folk song was heard.

Immediately Tian SiSi's spirit was awakened, she crawled to the road as she saw a covered carriage breaking through the fog.

Driving the carriage was a white-haired old man.

Tian SiSi felt relieved.

An old man was always more trustable than the young ones.

Tian SiSi hailed, "Old gentleman, can you help bring me along? I will certainly give you rewards as a thank you."

The old man whistled, withheld the reins and looked at Tian SiSi for a while before asking her slowly, "Where is Miss going?"

This question really stumped Lady Tian.

Go home?

How could she go home like this? Even if her father did not scold her, other people would surely laugh loudly at her.

She just went out for one day and she already turned into this dirty appearance, nothing she wore was clean, she had lost a lot of her items.

"Tian Xin, the little girl managed to run away, she is actually faring a bit better than me."

Should she look for Tian Xin?

But where? Where could she run away to?

If she could not go home, also could not find Tian Xin, then she could only go to Chiangnan.

She had come out this far, she must go to Chiangnan.

But she had only walked 200 miles, she had already turned into this appearance, and now she was even penniless.

If she were by herself, could she get to Chiangnan?

Tian SiSi stood stunned in the roadside, the tears nearly dropped.

The old man sized her up, and said suddenly, "Is it possible that Miss has met a robber?"

Tian SiSi nodded, the person she met was much, much scarier than a robber.

The old man sighed and shook his head, "A mature lady like you should not walk alone by yourself, nowadays people have changed a lot, there are many dishonest people around Oh."

He also sighed and then said, "Get aboard, good or bad I will deliver you to your home."

Tian SiSi lowered her head and slowly said, "My family lives very far from here."

The old man said, "Very far, how far?"

Tian Sisi said, "In Chiangnan."

The old man was stunned, with a forced smile he said, "Chiangnan, that is very far, what should we do then?"

Tian SiSi wondered, "Where is the old gentleman originally going?"

The old man's wrinkled face suddenly showed a happy face and said, "I have a relative who is hosting a joyous occasion today, I am hurrying to drink and celebrate, therefore I simply had not planned on carrying passengers."

Tian SiSi hesitated and said, "Then we shall do this: wherever the old gentleman is going, I will go with you."

When the old gentleman has arrived at the place, I will alight.”

She only wanted to leave this preposterous place, as far away as possible.

The old man thought a while and then said generously, “Good, if that is so, Miss who had met some misfortune, I will not accept your fare, I might even deliver Miss to a nearby place.”

Tian SiSi felt so grateful that she could not say anything. There were good persons in this world after all, she found one at least.

The carriage went for a long time, swinging from side to side, while the old man hummed a folk song in a low voice.

Tian SiSi was so worn out that she had quickly fallen asleep, in her dream she was a small infant again, lying down inside the swinging cradle, while her wet nurse was humming a lullaby.

This dream was very beautiful and sweet. It was only a pity that despite of the sweet beautiful dream, one had to wake up at some point.

Tian SiSi was awakened suddenly by the sound of firecrackers, only then she realized that the carriage had already stopped.

The old man stood outside the carriage door looking at her. When he saw she opened her eyes he smilingly said, “We have arrived at my relatives place, Miss can alight.”

She rubbed her eyes and looked blearily outside the carriage.

The carriage stopped outside a house that was not small, with large frontyard, and surrounded by the wheat field, the wheat had grown tall and shone bright golden yellow in the sunlight.

Several chickens bundled together in the corner of the yard, they were obviously scared by the sound of the firecrackers a moment ago.

There were many congratulatory red papers inside and outside the house. Everyone was wearing new clothes and showing happy faces.

Tian SiSi's heart actually felt bitter, she suddenly felt that all these people were a lot happier than her.

That new bride was certainly like a blossoming flower today.

"And I? When will I have this culmination day?"

Tian SiSi nipped her lip, jumped down the carriage, lowered her head and said, "Many thanks old gentleman, I no longer dare to ask anything else, since the old gentleman has delivered me here, II feel extremely grateful."

After speaking, she broke into sobs as she tried to hide her face.

The old man kept looking at her, while showing sympathetic expression and said, "Where is Miss going to go?"

Tian SiSi hung her head and said, "II have some place to go, the old gentleman does not need to worry about me."

The old man gave a long sigh, "How about this, if Miss does not have anything urgent, you can get refreshed and drink in celebration with us."

He had not finished his sentence, before someone else also said, "Miss already arrives here, if Miss does not celebrate with us that means you look down upon us country folk."

Someone else also said with a smile: "Moreover, we were worried that we did not have enough people to fill the tables. If Miss is willing to be present, that will be very good, please come in without any hesitation."

Tian SiSi found out that there were many people who welcomed her, a couple of older ladies, wearing golden hairpins and golden bracelets on the wrists had held on to Tian SiSi's hands.

Another braided girl had also pushed her from behind, the country folk's warmheartedness and hospitality was displayed completely for her.

Although Tian SiSi suddenly felt a surge of warm feeling in her heart, she still said, "Why is there so much good intention and graciousness?"

The crowd started to advance into the house.
Some firecrackers made loud noises outside.
A pair of wedding candles burned bright, the dancing flames were like children's smiling faces.

On the two eight-sided tables, people had covered them with large bowls of luxurious feast, sumptuous food that symbolized people's happiness and abundance.

In life, some things could change very quickly, even if someone were to befallen upon a misfortune, that was also worth enduring. If she could persevere, later she would get the rewards.

Tian SiSi suddenly felt happy, as if she had left behind these unfortunate bitter experiences.

She was gently prodded to a table on the left side, that old man sat by her.

Only five people sat on this table, she discovered that the guests that were celebrating were not that many. Besides her, the other people there seemed to have consisted only of very close friends.

Everyone seemed to be curious about her and took some measuring look at her, she became a bit uncomfortable, and could not help leaning to the old man and whispered, "I do not bring any wedding present, how can I feel right about it?"

The old man smiled, "No need, you do not need to give a present."

Tian Sisi said, "Why don't I need to give a present?"

The old man smiled, "This marriage celebration was decided hastily, nobody had time to prepare wedding gifts."

Tian Sisi said, "Hasty decision? I heard that when country folks get married, they usually prepared it for a long time, why"

The old man interrupted her, "Ordinarily when people get married, they certainly would have a very long preparation, but this marriage is actually different. "

Tian Sisi said, "How different?"

The old man was hesitant, "Because the bride and the bridegroom are a little special."

Tian SiSi grew more interested as she listened and asked, "What is so special? Actually how are they related to the old gentleman?"

The old man said with a smile, "The bridegroom will come out shortly, you may see him immediately."

Tian Sisi said, "The bridegroom will come out shortly, how about the new bride?"

The old man smiled a little mysteriously and said, "The new bride is already in this house."

Tian Sisi said, "In this house? Where?"

She looked around the house, but there were only herself, this old man, and another 6-7 people.

The two old women who pulled her in, sat opposite her, they continued to smile hee hee... the powder on the face seemed to drop off little by little.

Maybe there are 50 layers of powder on those faces.

"The uglier the person, the more you need the powder to cover it", that saying must be true.

Tian SiSi laughed inside, the more she looked the more she felt that these two women were clowns.

Tian SiSi's smartly said, "She is the new bride?"

The old man shook his head, and smartly said with a smile, "How come there is such an ugly new bride?"

Tian SiSi felt better inward for the bridegroom, if someone married such a new bride, the ancestors really gave him bad luck.

In her mind, a new bride would always be attractive, at least compared to the guests.

But in this house the most attractive one was the other woman, who although pleasing to the eyes, she should already be a mother of several children at least.

Tian SiSi murmured, but finally could not help blurting out, "The new bride cannot be her, right?"

The old man said with a smile, "She might be the new bride's grandmother, how could it be her."

Tian Sisi said, "If it is not any of them, then who?"

Although she did not dare to look around openly, but she had glanced around in all direction, in this house besides these two women, everyone else seemed to be men.

She felt even more strange as she said, "Actually where is the new bride, why don't I see her?"

The old man said with a smile, "When the time comes she will certainly let you see her, even the the bridegroom is not anxious, why are you so anxious? "

Tian SiSi blushed, after some moments she could not no longer hold it in and asked, "Is the new bride attractive?"

The old man smiled mysteriously and said, "Certainly attractive, moreover she is the most attractive one in this house."

His eyes looked closely at Tian Sisi as was everyone.

Tian SiSi's face grew redder, she just dangled her head, when she saw a pair of feet in blue boots walking inside, above the shoes was a person wearing long red robe.

The bridegroom had finally come out.

How did this bridegroom look? Was he a clown? Handsome? Was he slim? An old man?

Tian SiSi tried to lift up her head to look but also felt a little embarrassed.

She was old enough to marry, but she had not, moreover she was not acquainted with this family.

Who knew that the bridegroom actually walk to her and paused in front of her.

Tian SiSi just felt very strange, before she heard the roars in the house as everyone was clapping.

Some people also complimented, "These two are really a perfect match, today they become a happy couple."

Some people also praised, "The new bride is attractive and fortunate, in the future they will have good fortune and long lives."

She pulled that old man's lower robe discreetly, and said quietly, "The new bride?"

The old man smiled and said, "The new bride is you."

"The new bride is me?"

Tian SiSi had laughed, she thought this old man really could crack a joke, but while smiling she felt that this was not right, this joke had really gone too far.

The guests in the house started to grow louder, "The new bride need to quickly stand and make a bow to heaven and earth, the bridegroom is already anxious to enter the marriage chamber."

The bridegroom's feet seemed to be fixed on the ground, not moving from that spot.

Tian SiSi finally could not bear looking up.

With one look, she stiffened suddenly, stiffened like a block of wood.

Her soul seemed to fly away with fright.

The bridegroom, who wore the scarlet robe, the brand-new blue boots, the black cap with peacock feathers, was just like any other bridegroom.

But his face — — there was no other more auspicious face in the world

This face was just simply not a person's face.

A gloomy, icy face, the one that did not have the slightest expression, just like a dead fish's eyes. Those also did not have the slightest expression.

He continued to stand motionless, looking straight at Tian Sisi.

As if even when Tian SiSi had not been born, he had stationed himself here already!

Mr. Ge!

Tian SiSi only felt her own body slowly sliding down from the seat, as if she no longer could sit still, the teeth were also chattering “cluck-cluck” non-stop.

She felt like a pig being led to a slaughterhouse.

All this preparation, the marriage chamber, the wedding candles, the wedding guests, and all the arrangements were like the baits, waiting for her to get hooked.

She wanted to cry, but she could not; she wanted to scream, but she could not.

Mr. Ge was looking at her calmly and slowly said, “I have asked you twice, when we can get married, since you cannot

decide, I have to decide myself.”

Tian Sisi said, “II do not”

The sound percolated back and forth in her throat, but she could not say it aloud.

Mr. Ge said, “This time we should get married, not only is it perfectly justifiable, but it is also a proper marriage.”

That old man said, “Right, I am the matchmaker.”

That two women say with a smile while eating, “We are the happy mothers.”

Mr. Ge said, “All the witnesses are already present, no one can have any objection to this marriage.”

Tian SiSi felt paralyzed, with stricken face, she did not seem to have the strength to run away.

Even if she could run away, what was the use?

In any case she could not escape from Mr. Ge’s clutch.

“But am I to be dispatched like this to the marriage chamber?”

“Whoosh...”, she finally slipped from her seat and dropped down.

Suddenly someone said, “If no one else objects to this marriage, I actually have some words to say.”

The one who spoke was a short and stout young man, with a round face, long slit eyes, a tall and large forehead, the distance between the two eyebrows was nearly twice compared to other persons.

His mouth was very big, but the head was even bigger, he looked a little unusual.

But his face was actually very calm, and the words flowed naturally.

He sat on the right side, his left hand held a cup, while his right hand held the wine pot.

The wine cup was very big.

But he actually drank very quickly using his cup compared to the others, he might have already drunk several cups already.

What was strange was that no other people saw him a moment ago in the house.

Nobody saw when this person entered the house or when he sat down.

Everyone in that house suddenly was startled by this person.

Mr. Ge actually did not show any expression with this new development and said lightly, "You have something to say about this marriage?"

This young man sighed and said, "I did not want to say anything initially, but I have to say something now."

Mr. Ge replied, "What do you want to say?"

This young man said, "Everything about this marriage is indeed ready, but there is something that is not right."

Mr. Ge said, "Which part is not right?"

This young man said, "If she were the new bride, the bridegroom should not be you."

Mr. Ge said, "If it should not be me, who should it be?"

This young man pointed to his own nose with the mouth of the wine pot and said with a smile, "It should be me."

Two

“The bridegroom should be him? Who is he?”

Tian SiSi was already paralyzed, but upon hearing these words, she looked up.

This short and stout young man was also looking at her.

Tian SiSi initially did not recognize this person, but she felt that he looked a little familiar.

This young man then slowly said, “I am surnamed Yang, called Yang Fan, Yang for wood, Fan for ordinary.”

Indeed he looked like an ordinary person, only a little fatter than other young people.

Besides being fat, he did not seem to have any other strong points.

But the name “Yang Fan” actually scared Tian Sisi. She suddenly remembered this person.

Yesterday evening when she hid in the forest, she saw a young fat person following behind her father.

He was the government officer Third Master Yang’s son, of whom Tian SiSi had heard that he was a monster.

It was said that in ten days he was rarely sober for a day, when he was sober he spent time in the temple, but when he was drunk he lived in the brothel.

Wherever he live, he still looked like a monster.

She could not think that this monster could unexpectedly appear here.

It was said that he would not stay at home, it was said that once he was grown-up, even the Third Master rarely saw this person.

It was said that he had done many strange matters, although not the proper ones.

Tian SiSi could not understand why her father picked him for her.

Mr. Ge also treated this person as a monster, he stared at him carefully for a long time, before he suddenly laughed.

This was the first time Tian SiSi saw him laugh.

She never imagined how he looked when he laughed, at one point she thought he even could not laugh.

But right now she saw that he was laughing.

That gloomy, cold face had laughed suddenly, and it really looked strangely fearful, like the laughing face of a dead person.

He laughingly said, "You also want to be a bridegroom."

Yang Fan said lightly, "I did not really want to be a bridegroom, but good or bad I cannot avoid it."

Mr. Ge said, "Why? Are some people forcing you with the knife behind you?"

Yang Fan sighed, "A person just cannot see his own wife becoming someone else's bride..."

Mr. Ge said, "She is your wife?"

Yang Fan said, "Although at the present she is not, but it is practically settled."

Mr. Ge coldly said, "I only know that she has agreed personally to marry me."

Yang Fan said, "Even if she has promised you, that is still useless."

Mr. Ge said, "Useless?"

Yang Fan said, "Because her father has already betrothed her to me, not only we have her parents' wish, moreover we have proposed through the matchmaker, so everything is settled properly. Nobody can have any objection to this."

Mr. Ge was silent for a very long time, before he suddenly said, "It seems that there is only one way that you will not marry her."

Yang Fan said, "There is no other way."

Mr. Ge said, "Yes, a dead person cannot marry a wife."

Yang Fan laughed.

This was also the first time Tian SiSi saw him laugh.

His face became wonderfully rounder, the slit eyes also became longer, and like his face was beaming. This short and stout person suddenly became a little more extraordinary, and nobody could despise him.

Because of this reason, nobody in that house approached him to kick him out.

As soon as he laughed, he changed, becoming much more friendly, like he became more approachable, and the whole round face became much more attractive.

Even if the one who saw him laugh was a very repugnant person, with this laugh he would no longer dislike him, he could not let him go without trying to get to know him some more.

Tian SiSi suddenly wanted him to run away quickly, the sooner he got away the better, and he should run as far as he could.

She suddenly did not wish him to die under Mr. Ge's hands.

Because she knew that Mr. Ge's wugong was very fearful, this young fat person smiled so lovable, she really did not wish to see blood flowing down his laughing face, smearing the face and making it ugly.

She had seen five people who had died under Mr. Ge's hands, all five died so suddenly, with holes in the forehead. But the biggest fear was because she did not know how Mr. Ge killed those people, she did not even have a clue.

This young fat person's forehead was especially wide, Mr. Ge should have no problem with him. Tian SiSi could imagine how the blood would dripped down from his forehead.

Mr. Ge luckily had not attacked, he was still standing motionless.

Yang Fan had just drunk his bowl of wine, when he suddenly put up the wine bowl and it sounded like a “clang” sound.

Mr. Ge's complexion changed immediately.

Yang Fan slowly put down the wine bowl, looked at it several time and shook his head while muttering, “Excellent evil and cruel hidden weapon, very formidable.”

Tian SiSi really felt he was muddled.

Mr. Ge was still standing motionless, how could he send out the hidden weapon already?

If indeed he had, how could this young fat person deflected the hidden weapon with just a small wine bowl?

The flash of Mr. Ge's hidden weapon would send a person to his doom, could split out a person's head suddenly with holes, why couldn't it break a small wine bowl?

Tian SiSi could not understand, she also did not believe that this young fat person could have such a solid background.

But why did Mr. Ge's complexion changed so ugly?

She heard someone sighing and said, "This kind of hidden weapon will weaken the lifespan of a person by ten years, if it were me, I would not want to use it."

Mr. Ge was silent for a very long time, said suddenly, "Have you seen this kind of hidden weapon before?"

Yang Fan shook his head and said, "This is my first time."

Mr. Ge said, "You are also the first person who is still alive after this hidden weapon attack."

Yang Fan said, "After the first, there will be the second, the third, and so on. This hidden weapon is not that great, you should not use it anymore."

Mr. Ge was silent for a very long time when he also asked suddenly, "How are you related to Song ShiNiang?"

Song ShiNiang was the famous number one hidden weapon experts, not only was she the best at evading the hidden weapons, but also releasing them and making them.

Tian SiSi always knew that Song ShiNiang was one of the great persons, she kept hearing the name all the time.

If she were not a woman, Tian SiSi would have also included her name in the list, the person to be sought for for her own.

Yang Fan actually shook his head and said, "This is the first time I have heard the name."

Mr. Ge said, "You have never heard this name, and you have never seen this kind of hidden weapon?"

Yang Fan said, "True."

Mr. Ge said, "But you have actually evaded this hidden weapon."

Yang Fan smiled, said, "If I have not evaded it, there has to be many big holes on me."

Mr. Ge kept staring at him, before he gave a long sigh suddenly and said, "Can you tell me how you evade it?"

Yang Er said, "No."

Mr. Ge said, "Can you return this hidden weapon to me?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

He smiled suddenly, then said easily, "But if you crawl away, I will not oppose this idea."

Mr. Ge did not ask the second time.
He crawled away.

Tian SiSi looked stunned.

Anyone who saw Mr. Ge would think that he was harder than a stone, colder than the ice, he was simply not like a live person.

His face never showed any expression.

But as soon as he saw this young fat person, he showed all kinds of expressions, not only did he laugh, but he also almost cried, his complexion had become really ugly, and now he also unexpectedly crawled away.

This young fat person really had some real skills.

But Tian SiSi looked right and left, and yet she still could not understand how he could be such a great person.

He did not look very intelligent compared to other idiots.

Tian SiSi could not see it, others also could not see.

Everyone kept staring with eyes as big as an egg, and with open mouth, big enough to swallow two eggs.

Yang Fan drank a bowl of wine, and suddenly said with a smile, "Why don't you all sit down, why do you keep standing? Moreover all the food and wine are ready, why no one is eating, why so polite?"

If he had said this in the beginning, others would just consider him as breaking the wind, but now everyone just followed his order immediately.

As soon as he said this short speech, everyone in the house immediately sat down, no one was standing any longer.

Tian SiSi initially sat down, but then she stood up and started walking away.

Yang Fan had not seemed to notice her as he said easily, "Mr. Ge has certainly left, if you want to look for him there is still enough time."

Tian SiSi's feet seemed to be suddenly nailed to the place, she turned her head to face him as she stared at this young fat person maliciously.

Yang Fan did not look at her directly, raising his glass he said with a smile, "I really do not like drinking alone, why don't you accompany me to drink several cups?"

He looked up briefly, poured out the wine, and immediately none was left in the bowl.

Tian SiSi had turned around and walked up to him, she said loudly, "Hey drunkard, why don't you use the pot to drink?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "My mouth is too big, the mouth of this wine pot is actually too small."

He unintentionally cast a glance at Tian SiSi's small mouth, and suddenly laughed, "One big, one small, it is not really matching."

Tian SiSi's face became bright red as she said bitterly, "You seemed to be satisfied with yourself. Even if you have just helped me, it was not that great."

Yang Fan said, "You acknowledged that I have helped you?"

Tian SiSi said, "Humph."

Yang Fan said, "Then why don't you thank me?"

Tian Sisi said, "That is what you want to do yourself, why do I need to thank you?"

Yang Fan said, "Good good, very very true, initially I wanted to eat and now I have sated all my own appetite."

Tian SiSi bit her lips and suddenly said aloud, "Regardless of what happened, you cannot have the notion that I will marry you!"

Yang Fan said, "You really do not want marry me?"

Tian Sisi said, "I will not."

Yang Fan said, "You are determined?"

Tian Sisi said, "I will not marry you."

Yang Fan said, "Will you change your mind?"

Tian SiSi's voice became louder, "If I said I would not marry you, I would not marry you until I die."

Yang Fan stood up suddenly and bowed to her respectfully, "Many thanks many thanks, I am deeply grateful."

Tian SiSi was stunned, "Why do you thank me?"

Yang Fan said, "Not only must I thank you, moreover I must also thank the heaven and earth."

Tian Sisi said, "What problems do you have?"

Yang Fan said, "I do not have any problem, but I do have a little suspecting mind."

Tian Sisi said, "What do you suspect?"

Yang Fan said, "I always suspect that you will insist on marrying me, therefore I am always really worried."

Tian SiSi screamed, "I want to marry you? You are confused."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "But now my head is not confused, I no longer feel afraid, as long as you are not marrying me, we can discuss anything else."

Tian SiSi coldly said, "I do not have any reason to marry you."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "If uncle Tian force you to marry me?"

Tian SiSi thought and then said, "I will not go back home."

Yang Fan said, "Sooner or later you must go back."

Tian SiSi thought and then said, "After I get married, then I will go home."

Yang Fan clapped his hands and said with a smile, "Great idea, it is simply a wonderful idea."

He knitted his brows and suddenly asked, "But who will you marry?"

Tian Sisi said, "It is none of your business."

Yang Fan sighed, "It is not my business, but I worry that you will not marry."

Tian SiSi said, "I will not marry? You think nobody wants me? You think I am ugly and peculiar?"

Yang Fan gave a forced smile, "You certainly are not ugly, but your temperament, who can understand it?"

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "You do not need to worry about it, some people will be able to understand me."

Yang Fan said, "He might not, for example, that Mr. Ge"

As soon as she heard Mr. Ge's name, Tian SiSi's face turned white.

Yang Fan easily said, "He might not really want to marry you, maybe he has some other motives?"

Tian SiSi could not bear it anymore and exclaimed, "What other motives? What other intention does he have?"

Yang Fan shook his head, said, "I do not know his intention, I am only afraid that once he achieved his purpose

he will set you aside, at that time if you want to marry me, I no longer want to be involved.”

Tian SiSi’s face became very red with anger, “You can rest assured that I would rather become a nun first before I marry you.”

Yang Fan shook his head and said, “I cannot feel relieved by that, there are things in the world that originally look difficult, and yet it may still happen.”

Tian SiSi was angry, sneeringly said, “Who do you think you are, a handsome man? On what grounds do you think I will marry you?”

Yang Fan said lightly, “Whether I am handsome or not, a pig or not, it has nothing to do with it. I only want to see you get married, and then I can feel relieved.”

Tian Sisi said, “Good, when I get married, I will let you know as soon as possible.”

She was simply too enraged.

The person who should feel relieved was her, but this pig actually took the opportunity first.

She did not want to look at him again, so after saying this, she turned to go.

Who knew that Yang Fan said again, “Wait, wait a moment.”

Tian Sisi said, “Wait what? Don't you feel relieved?”

Yang Fan said, “Indeed I do not feel very relieved. What if you meet some accident and die?”

Tian Sisi said, “What does it have to do with you?”

Yang Fan sternly said, "Of course it does. You now belong to Yang family already. If you meet some trouble, I need to solve it for you, if you meet an accident, I also have to take revenge for you, wouldn't that be a lot of trouble for me? What I am afraid the most is trouble, how can you say that I should feel relieved?"

Tian SiSi's face was flushed with rage, as she sneeringly said, "I will refuse you stubbornly."

Yang Fan said, "That is actually not certain, everyone knows about the young lady's temperament, moreover"

He also sighed, "...you do not know yet when you will marry someone. Uncle Tian can capture you again at any point, if he forces you to marry me, what then?"

Tian SiSi called out, "So how will you feel relieved then, say it."

Yang Fan said, "Indeed I have a way."

Tian Sisi said, "What way?"

Yang Fan said, "If you want to marry someone, I will deliver you to him, wait until you get married, and only then, I will feel relieved."

Tian SiSi sneered, "It turns out you can also think thoroughly."

Yang Fan said, "You praise too much, I am actually a very careless person, but in this matter I have no alternative but to be particularly careful, marrying a wrong wife is certainly not amusing."

Tian SiSi stopped sneering, her face showed indescribable anger.

Yang Fan said, "Therefore whoever you want to marry, by all means say it, I will certainly deliver you to him."

Tian SiSi bit her lip and said, "I want to marry Qin Ge."

Yang Fan knitted his brows, said, "Sentimental elder brother (Qin Ge)? Who is your sentimental elder brother, how would I know."

Tian SiSi really wished to give him several slaps in the face, and said, "I said Qin Ge, Qin for dynasty, Ge for song, you have never heard of him?"

Yang Fan shook his head, said, "No."

Tian SiSi sneered, "So dumb. What else do you understand besides eating?"

Yang Fan said, "I can also drink."

He really drank the cup of wine, and only then said, "Good, Qin Ge is Qin Ge, I will certainly find him for you, but whether or not he is willing to marry you, I dare not guarantee it."

Tian Sisi said, "From that point on, I can find my own way."

Yang Fan said, "Although I may accompany you to look for him, we also must make a few rules for all concerned."

Tian Sisi said, "Makes a few rules for all concerned?"

Yang Fan said, "First, we both agree that I will not marry you, and you will not marry me."

Tian Sisi said, "Very good."

Yang Fan said, "Second, although we may go the same way, but you go and I go on our own way. Regarding anything, I will not force you, nor can you force me."

Tian Sisi said, "Very good."

Yang Fan said, "Third, if you find someone that pleases you, you can marry him; if I see someone that pleases me, I may marry her. We do not interfere with each other's private life."

Tian Sisi said, "Very good."

She was dizzy with anger, besides saying "very good" three times she could not say anything else. These three conditions should be brought up by her, but this pig actually said them first.

Everyone else had slid out of that house, which was now empty.

Yang Fan drank three cups of wine in one breath and then smilingly said, "In any event, I have benefited from knowing you, that I can drink this celebration wine, I should thank you."

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "How did you find me here? My father?"

Yang Fan smiled, "Some matters I do not want to tell you, you cannot force me."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said bitterly, "Perhaps you are already in cahoots with Mr. Ge."

Yang Fan nodded, said, "Perhaps, there is no sure thing in this world."

Tian SiSi looked around, could not bear asking, "Everyone else?"

Yang Fan said, "Gone."

Tian Sisi said, "Why did you let them go?"

Yang Fan said, "Even Mr. Ge I have let go, why should I detain the others?"

Tian Sisi said, "Why didn't you detain Mr. Ge?"

Yang Fan said, "He only wanted to marry you, although this is a stupid thing, it did not really count as a crime; Moreover, he had also invited me to drink."

Tian Sisi said, "But he has also killed people."

Yang Fan said lightly, "Haven't you killed people? Many people are supposed to die anyway."

Tian SiSi's face became red, said loudly, "Good, sooner or later the law will find him again, and I will not be disappointed."

After a while she said suddenly, "Can you show me his hidden weapon?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

Tian Sisi said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "If I said no, that means I cannot, we already discuss this before."

Tian SiSi stamped her feet, said, "Good, Since I cannot force you let's go."

Yang Fan said, “Why are you so anxious?”

Tian Sisi said, “Why am I anxious? Certainly anxious to get married.”

Yang Fan drank again and said easily, “You are anxious to go, I am not, you must go, just go first. We will walk our own separate ways anyway. I cannot let you dictate me.”

Tian SiSi grasped the wine pot suddenly, and smashed it to the floor, and then walked away.

Yang Fan sighed and muttered, “Luckily she did not see the wine pot over there...”

Tian SiSi had rushed there suddenly, “crash”, that wine pot also fell into pieces. Her anger subsided at last, before she turned around.

She actually saw Yang Fan holding a wine jug, drinking to his heart’s content. He said with a laugh, “The wine pots are all have been smashed, but I found this jug, the mouth of this jug matches the size of my mouth, so that is just appropriate.”

Three

Tian SiSi walked while grumbling and cursing continuously.

“Dead fat person, drunkard, pig”

While scolding the person, she suddenly smiled.

Tian Xin was planning to write this “Young lady’s Journey to the South”, which would have a Tang Xuanzang (the holy man), a Sun Wukong (the monkey), and a zhubajie (the pig).

If this book got really written, this story would certainly be more brilliant, if Tian Xin knew that, she would certainly

smile, and her pouts would disappear.

“But actually where has this little pouty mouth disappeared to?”

While smiling, Lady Tian was unable to restrain her sigh, but then she stopped her sighs.

Regardless of this turnout - - if you had someone to protect you from behind, that was always a good thing.

Although this pig looked stupid, he could scare some intimidating people on the way.

Without the pig, Tang Xuanzang probably would not reach the Paradise in the West.

Was this pig really stupid?

Perhaps in a pig's eyes, the stupidest animal in the world was a human.

END of CHAPTER 7

Chapter 8: Journey to the West

One

High noon.
The sun was right above.

It would be glorious if you were to sit under the tree shade or on the beach or in a pavilion by the pond, with the cool breeze blowing gently, blowing on your body, and in your hand you were carrying a glass of iced cold juice.

If you were to have that, you would certainly feel happy inside, that the world was a happy place, and the sunlight was so bright, so magnificent.

But if you were to walk under the hot sun, exposed fully to the fiery scorching heat of the sun, the feeling would not be too good.

Tian SiSi felt like she was simply stuck in a nightmare, her breathing became very labored.

The road ahead seemed to extend endlessly, the gravel underneath her feet sparkled and glittered, but they burned like you could boil an egg on it.

There were many outdoor shops under the tree shade that sold cold drinks and hot food. Several people sat there eating and drinking, even wearing straw hats, while at the same time complaining that the wine was too light.

But in Tian SiSi's eyes, those people were so happy that they were like little gods that were enjoying life.

"A lucky person often does not know that he is lucky."

Only now Tian SiSi understood this saying.

If two days ago she saw this kind of food and wine, they would only look like dog food. But now, if someone offered her this wine, perhaps she would feel so grateful that she might shed some tears.

She really wanted to drink at least two bowls, her lips were so parched.

But to buy the wine, one needed money.

Even if Lady Tian had not set out by herself, she absolutely knew this truth.

And now she did not even have a single coin.

Before, if Lady Tian wanted anything, as long as she opened her mouth, someone would come along with her request.

She had not realized how valuable “this money” before.

“That pig is so fat that he must be rich. Is he willing to lend me some money?”

Even thinking of asking him to lend some money caused her face to blush furiously, if she really had to ask him, she might die before opening her mouth to ask.

All the people under the tree shade kept staring at her.

She lowered her head, clenched her teeth, and walked away.

“Why hasn't that pig caught up with me? Is it possible that he is now dead drunk?”

She could only hate herself that a moment ago she did not eat and drink in that place before she left, “eating now is not going to be in vain”, she remembered that Yang Fan's happy speech had some truth in it.

The sound of a carriage came up behind her, when she turned to look, she saw a closed carriage creeping closer in the distant, a person sat lazily in the front, languidly controlling the reins, a pair of long slit eyes seemed to be open and shut at the same time, the mouth also had a thin smile.

This drunkard actually were not dead drunk and unexpectedly had caught up with her. Looking at how comfortable he was, Tian SiSi wished that she was under the ground.

Tian SiSi felt hatred that her teeth itched.

“This horse-drawn carriage was the one that stopped outside the house a while ago, why couldn’t I just sat inside. I went out first, why should this pig now get to enjoy this advantage.”

Now she could only hope that this pig will greet her and asked her aboard.

Yang Fan paid no attention to her, he did not seem to notice her, and yet the carriage stopped from time to time, never really leaving her that far behind.

Fortunately, she could not see his evil face, otherwise she would be really angry.

Tian SiSi called out loudly, “Hey...”

Yang Fan’s eyes opened and then closed.

Tian SiSi had to walk faster and called out, “Hey, are you a deaf person?”

Yang Fan’s eyes looked wider before he finally said lazily, “Who are you speaking to?”

Tian Sisi said, "Certainly to you, can I speak to this horse?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "My surname is not hey, so how should I know that you were speaking to me?"

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, "Hey, surnamed Yang."

Yang Fan's eyes remained closed.

Tian SiSi angrily called out, "I called surnamed Yang, aren't you surnamed Yang?"

Yang Fan said, "People with surname Yang are so many, how did I know which one are you calling?"

Tian Sisi retorted back, "Is there anyone else here that has surname Yang? Maybe this horse is also surnamed Yang?"

Yang Fan said, "Perhaps it is surnamed Yang, perhaps surnamed Tian, why don't you ask?"

He yawned lazily and then said lightly, "If you want to speak to me, you must call me older brother Yang (Yang da ge)."

Tian SiSi's eyes grew bigger, she acidly said, "Why do I want to call you older brother Yang?"

Yang Fan said, "First, because I am surnamed Yang, second, because I am older than you, third, because I am a man, you cannot call me Sister Yang."

He lazily smiled and then said, "If you call me Uncle Yang, I would not be happy at all."

Tian Sisi cursed, "Dead pig, evil pig."

Yang Fan said easily, "Only a pig wants to speak to a pig, I think you do not look like a pig."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, turned around, and promised herself that she would not pay any attention to him. Suddenly she heard a whistle, Yang Fan tugged the reins suddenly and the carriage jumped forward from her side.

The road ahead seemed endless, the sun was really bright, if one had to walk, even if one could endure it, one would be half dead by the end.

Tian SiSi become worried and said loudly, "Yang datou, wait a moment." (datou = big head, what else □)

When she said "da", her voice was intentionally very loud, but the "tou" sound was very low, as if she was calling him Yang dage.

Yang Fan really pulled the reins in, turned his head, and said with a smile, "Younger sister Tian (Tian xiaomei), what is the matter?"

Tian SiSi giggled to herself, she had finally managed to take advantage of him with great difficulty, certainly she smiled very sweetly and happily.

Which girl did not like to take advantage of other people?

Tian SiSi's eyes blinked as she said with a smile, "Since nobody sits in your carriage, is it convenient for you to let me sit inside? "

Yang Fan smiled, "Certainly you may."

Tian Sisi said, "Since you already promised me, you cannot force me to go down."

Yang Fan said, "Certainly."

His mouth had not closed, Tian SiSi had jumped up into the carriage, as she looked up from the window, she laughingly said, "Perhaps you had not heard clearly a moment ago, I was not calling you Yang dage, but Yang datou; your head is three times bigger than normal people."

She was sure this would rile up this evil person.

Who would know that instead of being angry, Yang Fan said with a smile, "A big head means the person is intelligent, I already know that I am intelligent, therefore you do not need to remind me."

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and with a "bang" closed the door of the carriage.

Yang Fan laughed loudly, raised the whip to urge the horse, also said, "With a big head one does not have to worry in the rain, others have umbrellas, I have a big head A big head has many advantages, you will slowly learn how."

Some people seemed to have luck since they were born, therefore they always lived very happily forever.

Yang Fan was this kind of person, it would not be easy for anyone to make him angry, not easy at all.

Two

When high noon passed, there were more people passing on the road, some by carriage, some riding a horse, some old, some young...

Tian SiSi suddenly saw a young knight, with a fluttering bright red silk handkerchief.

The red silk handkerchief was on his arm.

This person was certainly not Qin Ge, but he must have come from Chiangnan.

“Does he know Qin Ge? Or maybe he has heard of Qin Ge’s news?”

Tian SiSi spent her time in the heat looking out the window to see the people passing by.

She hoped she could wholeheartedly think about Qin Ge, and forgot anything else.

But she could not.

She was still awfully hungry, so hungry that she could not fall asleep.

If a person’s belly was empty, how could his heart be at rest?

Tian SiSi could not help looking up the window and said loudly, “Do you know what place is ahead?”

Yang Fan said, “No, anyway Chiangnan is still very far.”

Tian Sisi said, “I want to find a place to stop, Iam a little hungry.”

Yang Fan said, “You want to eat something?”

Tian SiSi had swallowed her saliva, said, “Yes, eat somethingeat something that is not a big deal.”

Yang Fan said, “Since it is not a big deal, why eat?”

He sighed and muttered “This woman is actually a rarity, not eating anything at all throughout the day is not a big deal. If it were me, I would be going insane with hunger.”

Tian SiSi called out suddenly and said, “I am also going insane with hunger.”

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Then you should eat, the only thing is if you want to eat, you need money, do you have some?"

Tian Sisi said, "II"

Yang Fan said easily, "If you do not have any money to eat, when you eat without paying, that person must suffer by the wooden board. If that inch-thick board hit the buttocks, the feeling is not any better than the hunger."

Tian SiSi blushed and bit her lips, after a very long time, only then could she raise her courage to ask, "YouDo you have some money?"

Yang Fan said, "I have some money, but only for me. You are not my wife, I do not want to take care of you!"

Tian Sisi said, "Who wants you to take care of me?"

Yang Fan said, "If you do not want me to take care of you, and you do not have any money, do you want to stay hungry until we reach Chiangnan?"

Tian SiSi was stunned for a while before she slowly said, "II shall think of a way to make money."

Yang Fan said, "That is very good, how do you want to make money?"

Tian SiSi was stunned.

Her entire life she never had to make her own money, she did not know how to make some money.

After a while, she probingly asked, "Where do you get your money?"

Yang Fan said, "Certainly from work."

Tian Sisi said, "How?"

Yang Fan said, "There are many ways to make money and to earn a living, a kungfu teacher, a bodyguard, a night guard, a hunter, a ginseng gatherer, a hotel waiter, as businessman, I have done all of them."

He smiled, then said, "If a person does not want to starve, he must rely on his own effort to survive. As long as it is an honest means to make money, nothing is too disgraceful to do. But do you know what you can do?"

Tian SiSi could not say anything.

She really could not do anything, or anything that will make money.

Yang Fan said easily, "Some people only can spend money and cannot make money, if this kind of a person starves to death, nobody can take pity on him."

Tian Sisi indignantly said, "Who wants you to take pity?"

Yang Fan said, "Good, you have the spirit, but even with the spirit, a person can also be uncomfortably hungry, until when can you stay hungry?"

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, she nearly cried.

Yang Fan said, "I have found a way for you to make money."

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "What way?"

Yang Fan said, "You can become my carriage driver, every hour I will give you a tael."

Tian Sisi said, "A tael?"

Yang Fan said, "A tael you also consider too little? If you drive a carriage for others, most will only give you five pennies."

Tian Sisi said, "Good, a tael is fine, butbut"

Yang Fan said, "But what?"

Tian SiSi blushed and said, "I have never driven a carriage."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "That is not a problem, anyone can drive a carriage, if a person cannot control a horse, this person must be a donkey."

For the first time, Tian SiSi finally found a way to earn some money.

This one tael might not be a big accomplishment.

After driving the carriage for an hour, her waist had become sore, her back was also hurt. Her two arms were already almost numb, and the hands that pulled the reins were almost bleeding by the friction.

So when she received this tael from Yang Fan, her tears nearly dropped.

That was actually not tears of sadness, but tears of delight.

For the first time she was enjoying the happiness of her own labor!

Yang Fan was looking at her, his eyes were gleaming and he said softly with a smile, "Now that you are rich, you might go and eat something."

Tian SiSi lifted up her chest and said loudly, "I can go and eat by myself, you do not need to teach me that."

Her hand gripped tightly this tael, this small amount of money felt more precious than even all her jewelry. She knew that no one would be able to take away this tael from her hand.

Three

This town was not big.

Tian SiSi looked for a nearby restaurant, and strode in with the chest lifted high. Although she only held one tael, but she felt like a millionaire, like she was never richer before.

Although the waiter cast a glancing doubt at her, he poured out some tea for her and said, "What does Miss want to eat?"

Tian SiSi drank this cup of tea with one breath, and then said, "Do you have shiitake mushroom here?"

Whenever, wherever you are, the shiitake mushroom was only for the rich people.

The waiter took another look at her and said, "We certainly have the shiitake mushroom, moreover it was imported from a very far away place, but it is very expensive."

Immediately Tian SiSi put out her money on the table and said, "No problem, just prepare the shiitake mushroom with ham and a stewed chicken."

She was determined to eat delicious food.

The waiter cast a glance at the piece of coin with the corner of his eyes and coldly said, "The shiitake mushroom and ham, with stewed chicken cost five tael, does Miss really want it?"

Tian SiSi was stunned.

After a while, she slowly put out a hand and quietly covered the money on the table.

She did not have any clue at all about what a tael's worth really was.

Now she knew.

The waiter said, "We have a special menu for typical guests, vegetable soup and plain rice, it is very filling."

It turned out that a tael could only pay for a "special menu for typical guests". The earning from an hour's hard labor was not really a large amount.

Tian SiSi held back her tears and said, "Good, prepare the special menu for typical guest."

And then someone said, "Cook a bowl of shiitake mushrooms with ham and chicken for me, also 3 or 4 matching stir-fried dishes, with two catties of wine."

Unknown to all, Yang Fan had come in, and moreover had sat on a table nearby her.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, paying no attention to him, neither listening to what he said nor looking at him.

The food had come, and she lowered her head and ate.

But the fragrance of ham and stewed chicken near her pervaded her nose.

A person could not stop breathing.

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "This fatty already looks like a pig, but still he does not eat sparingly, maybe he is trying to get butchered this new year's day?"

Yang Fan was not angry and easily said with a smile, "I am better than you, can make more money than you therefore I am eating better than you, this is just a fair proposition, nobody should feel angry."

Although this town was not big, this restaurant was actually not small, moreover it also had a private room.

From this private room suddenly a heavily-powdered woman came out, wobbling from side to side and reached the counter, then she extended her hand and said, "Master Niu wanted me to take 10 taels from the counter."

The cashier said with a smile, "I know, Master Niu had told me that if you came and sat today to give you 10 taels reward."

He took out a spindle of ten taels handed over to her and said with a smile, "You girl really have an easy time making money."

This woman received the money, wobbled from side to side, turned her head suddenly and smilingly said, "If you think we have an easy time making money, why don't you allow your wife and the daughter to do the same?"

The cashier's complexion had changed, as if his mouth was stuffed suddenly by a smelly preserved egg.

Tian SiSi was listening, Yang Fan said suddenly, "You also think she has an easy time making money?"

Driving a carriage for an hour would only get you one tael, but just sitting would get 10 taels.

It looked a little bit unfair.

Yang Fan said again, "The way they make money looks easy, because they are betraying their own innocence and sense of honor, if anyone can betray that, then indeed they can make money easily, only ..."

He sighed, then said, "... although they can earn a lot of money easily, this is actually very painful, only money that is obtained with hard work, then you can spend it with a clear conscience."

Tian SiSi could not help nodded, she suddenly realized that his words really made a lot of sense.

This was the first time she thought that this pig was not that stupid.

"Perhaps a person with a big head truly thinks deeper compared to many others."

She felt suddenly that although he ate more than other people, that was still forgivable.

END OF CHAPTER 8

Chapter 9: Full Display of Wealth

In a restaurant waiter's mind, there were two kind of visitors who came to eat.

Tian SiSi was one kind, a guest that had a special menu of prepared meal, certainly the lowest class of guests. He did not need to greet them specially, he did not need to even give her a smiling face.

Yang Fan was another kind of guests, who ordered many different dishes and drink, their rank was certainly elite.

Because when he had drunk a lot, the tip they left behind was not small.

Moreover, if someone had selected 4-5 different dishes, they usually could not finish them, and the waiter possibly could have some night time snack, and even some wine to go with it, that would be good.

In a waiter's eyes, initially there were two kinds of people, but today these two persons actually seemed to be of another strange kind.

These two people obviously knew each other, but they actually sat on two separate tables.

They obviously spoke to each other, but their eyes did not look at anyone in particular, like these two were speaking while thinking aloud.

"Perhaps they were young husband and wife who just quarrelled."

The waiter decided to flatter the female guest, if his judgment was good, today perhaps he could reap some benefit, because there was opportunity with a woman who

quarrelled with her husband, moreover this woman did not look very smart.

A waiter in a small restaurant did not have many advantages, but sometime they could reap some big benefit.

He suddenly heard the clanging bells outside, two shiny mules had stopped outside the gate, two people alighted while holding up their head and entered, who turned up to be two children.

These two mules seemed even more spirited than a horse, the whole bodies were as smooth as glass, and colored brown, they wore new saddles, the shining stirrups, and the bright red reins.

These two children also seemed more spirited than adults, they were both about 14 years old, the hairs were combed up into high braids, with embroidered clothes, big eyes looking straight, even without the smiles, there were two dimples on their faces.

The one on the left raised his horsewhip and pointed to the waiter's nose, "Is your restaurant the biggest place in this town?"

The waiter just smiled and did not open his mouth, but the cashier had interjected, "This is the biggest restaurant in town, anything that you two would like to eat, this restaurant can prepare it."

This child knitted his brows, turned to the other child and said, "I know already that this is a poor place, it does not even have a decent restaurant."

The other child had observed Tian SiSi several times, and said along, "Since there is no other place, let it be."

The child with the horsewhip said, "Such a dirty place, how can Miss eat something here?"

The other child said, "You tell them to make everything especially clean, that should be the end of it."

The cashier interrupted, " Yes, yes we can certainly attend to the kitchen carefully and use all new utensils."

The child with the horsewhip said, "How much does your best table of dishes cost?"

The cashier said, "The best elegant and expensive banquet costs 5 taels"

He had not finished his sentence, this child had wrinkled his eyebrows and said, "How can you eat with only 5 taels? What person do you think we are? Country folks' first time in a restaurant?"

The cashier smiled, "If the customer asked for 10 taels, 20 taels banquet table, we can also provide that."

This child nodded reluctantly and said, "Good, prepare a table of 20 taels for us."

He took out a spindle of money and, "trang" he had thrown it on the counter and said, "This is the installment, we will come back."

He also stared at Tian SiSi twice before pulling the other child to go, these two whispered together some words, and together suddenly laughed. They laughed while turning at Tian SiSi, and then they jumped onto the saddle.

Immediately the two mules took to their heels and disappeared.

Someone said, "Those are very pretty mule, I have never seen such on this road."

This person with full beard, opened shirt, and holding a wine cup, just walked out of the private room, his face looked like a tyrant.

Another person replied with a smile, "If Master Niu said so, these mules must be good."

This person's complexion was greenish, the eyes were red, he looked about 40 years old, but already had bended waist and humpbacked, if not a deformity, it must have been because of excessive wine and women.

There were also two other people, a tall thin person, wearing a black sword on his waist, a long one but actually of not so high-quality iron, the eyes upturned, with continuous sneers at the corners of his mouth, looking like he was a lot more outstanding than the rest of the world.

Finally the one behind was the oldest, most of the teeth had come loose, the face was wrinkled unevenly. He wore a long green robe and held a golden folding fan, "spew" he expelled a thick phlegm on the ground, the lewd eyes cast a glance at Tian SiSi.

Tian SiSi immediately wanted to vomit.

These people not only had made her want to vomit, compared to the big head, this bunch of people really did not look pleasing to the eyes at all.

Master Niu had just drunk up the wine in his cup, also said, "Looks like the Missy of these two children must be a little extraordinary."

That ill-health demon replied immediately, "However extraordinary, since she has arrived here, she must first visit Master Niu."

Master Niu shook his head, sternly said, “ZiXiu, how can you speak so wildly, aren’t you afraid that MeiGong and Gentleman Ji will laugh at you? You should know that there are many capable people in jiang-hu, a person like me is not really that important.”

This lewd old man was originally called “MeiGong (beautiful male)”, while swinging the folding fan he said with a smile, “Brother Niu is too modest, if your reputation is nothing, my Ouyang MeiGong’s reputation would not be worth even a single cent.”

Although Master Niu wanted to give a modest appearance, he could not help smiling and said, “Brothers, although I have a little reputation at the border, but once inside the country, I am just a country folk. Therefore I only dare to stay in this place, I do not dare to walk to a big place, how can I compare favorably with MeiGong?”

Ouyang MeiGong said with a smile, “Brother Niu should not forget, we have come from a big place precisely just to visit Brother Niu, as long as the person is outstanding, it should be fine.”

Thereupon Master Niu laughed loudly, Tian SiSi actually felt nauseated, but remembering “Niu mo-wang” (Cow demon), was secretly amused.

In this Young lady’s journey to the south, encounters with demons and monsters happened many times, if Tian Xin really wrote this journey notes, this would become very brilliant.

Master Niu smiled, also said, “MeiGong has so much experience, do you know these two children's origin? “

Ouyang MeiGong continued fanning himself while saying hesitantly, "Looking at their style, if they are not some high-ranking senior official's people, they would be the descendants of an old martial world family. Even if they are of the royal family's descendants, I will not feel surprised."

Master Niu nodded and said, "MeiGong has a wise insight, perhaps in my opinion, these two children are of royal descendants in Beijing who are visiting some relatives in their home village."

Gentleman Ji's hand continuously held on to his sword hilt, rolled back his eyes, and sneeringly said, "I am afraid the two of you are mistaken."

Ouyang MeiGong frowned and said reluctantly with a smile, "According to Gentleman Ji, you already know her origin?"

Gentleman Ji said, "Mmm."

Master Niu said, "Who is she?"

Gentleman Ji coldly said, "She is not considered as a person, just a whor3."

Master Niu was stunned and said, "A whor3?"

Gentleman Ji said, "What a whor3 does, Master Niu will surely know?"

Master Niu said with a smile: "But how can a whor3 have such a grandiose style? I am afraid Gentleman Ji is mistaken."

Gentleman Ji said, "I cannot be wrong, not only is she a whor3, moreover she is a very special whor3."

Master Niu's voice thickened, "How special?"

Gentleman Ji said, "Other whor3 is selected by a client but this whor3 actually will select the client. Not only that, the money has to be substantial, and the place has to be luxurious."

Master Niu gave a forced laugh and said, "Does her hidden passage have flowers on it?"

Gentleman Ji said, "Not only without flowers, it even lacks any grassy roots."

Master Niu laughed so hard and so loud that the wine cup he held sprinkled its content all around.

Ouyang MeiGong laughed out loud too, while at the same time casting a glance at Tian Sisi.

Tian SiSi felt bewildered, she could not understand what they were saying, and she decided that she would ask the big-headed ghost later, what "a whor3" means.

Master Niu also said with a smile, "Even if she were a white tiger, yet she did not have any specialty, why would her fee be so high?"

Gentleman Ji said, "Because all men are bums, the higher the fee, the more men who wants to go to bed with her."

Master Niu nodded said with a smile, "She really knows a man's heart well, even my heart has been moved a little, perhaps I should wait here to give her a try."

Ouyang MeiGong clapped his hands suddenly and said, "I just remembered."

Master Niu said, "What has Mei Gong remembered?"

Ouyang Mei said, "Gentleman Ji, is she Zhang Haoer?"
(Haoer = good child)

Gentleman Ji said, "Precisely!"

Master Niu said with a smile, "Zhang Haoer, how is she a good person? Why is she good?"

Ouyang MeiGong said, "Not only is she the number one prostitute in jiang-hu, but also skillful in martial arts. Not only her skill in bed exceeds other people, her hands are not too shabby either."

Master Niu said with a laugh, "So, Mei Gong has been moved too, I wonder who she will select this evening?"

The two laughed while looking at each other grudgingly. As soon as it related to "money" and "woman", many good friends could become enemies.

Moreover they were not really good friends to start with.

Master Niu also glanced at Gentleman Ji and said, "Gentleman Ji, since you knew already about the lack of grass, is it possible that you already had an encounter with her?"

Gentleman Ji heh heh smiled.

Anyone who saw this kind of smile, would feel the urge to hit him on the face.

He sneeringly said, "What is strange is how Zhang Haoer is willing to come to this place, does she know that she will meet such a good-humored person as Master Niu?"

Master Niu's laughter had turned into a sneer and said, "I have prepared 500 taels for her, will it be enough? "

Gentleman Ji heh heh smiled, and did not say anything.

That “Zi Xiu” had not spoken for a long time, but at this point he interjected with a laugh “Even if this place is made of gold, 500 taels will be enough to buy it, I will prepare a bridal chamber for Master Niu.”

This person never missed an opportunity to flatter him.

Master Niu actually shook his head and said lightly, “Slow down, even if she is willing to sell, I may not necessarily want to buy, after all the 500 taels are not obtained without hard work.”

The person who flattered could not say anything.

Ouyang MeiGong laughed, “You can prepare the chamber by all means, as long as there is a new bride, you can always find the bridegroom.”

Tian SiSi could not bear it anymore, as soon as these people returned to the private room, she quietly asked, “What does a whor3 do? Is she a new bride?”

Yang Fan smiled and said, “Sometimes.”

Tian SiSi said, “Whose new bride?”

Yang Fan said, “A lot of people.”

Tian Sisi said, “How can a person be a new bride of a lot of people?”

Yang Fan looked at her up and down twice before saying, “You really do not understand?”

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and said, “If I had understood, why should I ask you?”

Yang Fan sighed and said, “She can be many people’s new brides, because she exchanges the bridegroom every day. “

END OF CHAPTER 9

Chapter 10: Lonely Young Ladies

A person who opened a restaurant, in principle, strived to serve the rich people.

Whether you were a whor3 or a rich descendant, you would be accepted, as long as you could pay a 20-taels banquet, they would be willing to summon even the ancestors to serve you.

Everyone in that restaurant was completely busy, preparing the tablewares, the tablecloth, and cleaning up the chairs.

The tableware was really all brand-new, at least these were five times better than the ones used by Tian SiSi, and the tablecloth was exchanged with the scarlet one that was usually used for marriage celebration.

Tian SiSi's face was also redder than the tablecloth.

She finally understood what a whor3 did.

What these people were saying before, she just understood it now.

She only hoped that she had not understood, if only that hated Yang Fan did not explain so clearly.

"This pig must not be a good thing, perhaps he has also been a bridegroom for some nights."

Whether this pig was a good person or not, really should not have concerned her, but for some reason, as soon as she thought about him, she suddenly became mad, and she pouted her mouth so big that you could hang a wine jar on it.

"Actually how does this Zhang Haoer look? Where does she look good?"

She felt unavoidably curious.

The repeated calling and urging sound gradually grew nearer, the long awaited Zhang Haoer had finally come.

A carriage with four horses stopped outside the door.

The people who just returned to the private room immediately had rushed outside again.

The cashier and the waiter had all bowed down, waiting respectfully in the entrance, although the waist was bended very low, the corners of the eyes secretly glanced up to see.

When a well-mannered man ran into a not so well-mannered woman, he could only took a glance here and there secretly.

After a very long time, the carriage door finally opened, after another long moment, there were two feet showing at the carriage door.

A pair of smooth silken feet was wearing a pair of soft satin embroidered shoes, but unexpectedly no socks.

Seeing these feet, a man's wit would mostly fly away.

Just as the feet touch the ground, they were retracted.

Some people from the restaurant immediately rushed to the carriage bringing a bright red rug and laid them down. Besides the two children, there were also 7-8 people.

But were these people male or female? How was their appearance? Nobody saw them.

All they saw was these feet.

The feet had finally been lowered.

Nearby these feet, there were also two pairs of feet.

Two flashy girls led Zhang Haoer go down the carriage. The procession walked slowly.

Her one hand pressed to the chest, while the other one was holding a girl's shoulder gently, the two willow-leaf eyebrows were deep, the small cherry mouth were tender and gentle.

“Zhang Haoer is really very good.”

But which part was good? Nobody was very clear, but she was certainly good, there was no reason not to be good.

She was indeed very attractive, the graceful bearing was indeed very exquisite.

But Tian SiSi looked from the right and the left, the more she looked the more she thought that she did not look honorable. Although her face was attractive, it was like a painted picture. Although her movement was exquisite, it was like a well-acted play.

Perhaps she was playing the role of Xi Shi, but Tian SiSi thought that she overdid it.

It was like inside the outer layer of clothing, there was nothing.

She just looked like a pretty doll.

What was strange was that every man's eyes in the room were all staring at her, even the pig focused his eyes undulatingly, and maybe with a little lewdness.

Tian SiSi really wanted to dig out his eyes.

The way Zhang Haoer walked inside was also very special, like being afraid to step on the ant, only after 20-30 minutes, did she reach the reserved seating for her.

When she sat down, everyone seemed to breath again, the pulsating heart could begin to relax again.

Zhang Haoer's eyes continued to drop down, she simply had not looked once at the other people.

She just sat down, then all kinds of hot dishes started to arrive at the table.

This banquet was only for her.

But she used the chopsticks only to stir the food a little and then laid down the chopsticks again, as if she had found a green fly in the dish.

Every dish was left intact, as if all of them had green flies in it.

Finally she just ate some porridge with pickled vegetables.

The pickled vegetables she had brought herself.

"Since she is not eating the food, why does she order such a big table of dishes?"

"Our Miss only orders the dishes to have a show."

This was dignity.

The men simply went insane.

A woman liked a man who showed dignity, but would a man not like a woman who showed dignity?

"If you can find a woman with such dignity, then your life will not be worthless."

Master Niu felt itchy inside already so he strode forward, with the utmost dignity he had greeted, "Are you Miss Zhang?"

Zhang Haoer had not lifted her eyes and said lightly, "I am surnamed Zhang."

Master Niu said, "I am surnamed Niu."

Zhang Haoer said, "Ah.. Master Niu, please sit down."
She spoke in falsetto voice, like singing.

Master Niu's wits all flew away as he prepared to sit.

Zhang Haoer said suddenly, "Master Niu, do you know me?"

Master Niu was stunned and said with a smile, "Today we finally meet, but like predestined friends, this is not too late."

Zhang Haoer said, "So, you do not know me."

Master Niu had to nod.

Zhang Haoer said, "I don't think I know you."

Master Niu had to nod.

Zhang Haoer said, "If you don't know me, and I do not know you, how can you sit here?"

Master Niu's face reddened, he said reluctantly with a smile, "But it was you who asked me to sit down."

Zhang Haoer lightly said, "That is only for politeness, moreover"

She smiled suddenly and said, "If I had asked Master Niu to kneel down, would Master Niu have also knelt down?"

Master Niu flushed like an eggplant, as he could not really show his anger.

If such a dignified woman smiled to you unexpectedly, how could you have a fit of temper?

Seeing Master Niu really looking like a stupid cow, Ouyang MeiGong's eyes had shone, fanning himself, he also went swinging forward, like his whole body felt really light.

Master Niu stared at him to see what he was going to say.

But he did not say anything, instead he just pulled out a big spindle of bright yellow gold that he put on the table.

Ouyang MeiGong had lived for 50-60 years, he was not a lovesick youth.

He knew that with this kind of woman, he did not need to say anything.

Just said it with gold.

Sometimes gold also could speak even better than any sweet talk you could say to a woman's heart, and in this occasion the gold could certainly provide better understanding for this woman.

Caressing the gold spindle with her fingers, Zhang Haoer really cast a glance at him.

Ouyang MeiGong had smiled, full of satisfaction at his choice.

His method was really the best method.

Who knew that Zhang Haoer only looked at him once, then looked up.

Ouyang MeiGong said with a smile, "This spindle of gold said something, did Miss Zhang hear?"

Zhang Haoer said, "What was it saying?"

Ouyang MeiGong continued fanning himself, "It was saying, as long as Miss nodded, it would belong to Miss Zhang."

Zhang Haoer's eyes blinked and said, "Is it really speaking? How come I couldn't hear it?"

Ouyang MeiGong was stunned, but also said with a smile, "Maybe it spoke too softly."

If there had been something in this world that could speak louder than a gold spindle, it must have been two gold spindles.

Ouyang MeiGong pulled out another gold spindle, placed it on the table, flicked it forward and said with a smile, "Now probably Miss can hear it?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I have not heard anything."

Ouyang MeiGong's eyebrows had wrinkled deeper, after clenching his teeth, he had pulled out two more gold spindles.

Since the gold had already been shown, there was no going back.

Ouyang MeiGong smiled very naturally and said easily, "Now I think Miss Zhang can hear it?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I have not heard it."
But she replied very simply.

Ouyang MeiGong's expression looked like it had been pricked by a needle, he unleashed his voice, "Has not heard it? Four gold spindles should be enough to make a deaf person hear."

Zhang Haoer beckoned with her hand suddenly, and a girl behind her also took out four gold spindles and put them on the table.

These four gold spindles were much bigger than Ouyang MeiGong's four spindles.

Zhang Haoer said, "Are you a deaf person?"

Ouyang MeiGong shook his head.
He could not make out what Zhang Haoer was going to say.

Zhang Haoer said lightly, "Since you are not a deaf person, why have you not heard what these four gold spindles are saying?"

Ouyang MeiGong said, "What were they saying?"

Zhang Haoer said, "They were saying that you should roll away, the further the better, then they can belong to you."

Ouyang MeiGong's expression no longer looked like it was being pricked by a needle.

Rather it was like being pricked 500 times in the face and another 300 times in his butt.

Master Niu laughed suddenly, he laughed so hard he had to bend down.

Tian SiSi also laughed inside secretly, she felt that this person had real skills, and she was also a very interesting person.

If a woman saw a woman make a man suffer, they generally thought that it was very interesting. But if she saw another woman made suffer by a man, she could become really angry.

But a man was different.

When a man saw another man made suffer by a woman, not only he could not sympathize with him, or even felt anger, in his heart he would feel strangely satisfied, even very happy.

Master Niu was now extremely happy.

Compared to Ouyang MeiGong, Zhang Haoer was more polite to him, perhaps she might even be already very interested in him, only his method was not right.

Now luckily he could still recover as it was not too late.

“As long as one is rich, why can’t he lay with this woman?”

Master Niu's dignity had returned, he stuck out his chest, coughed twice and said, “Miss Zhang, you are such a person that will not be touched merely by a few gold spindles.”

He had patted his own chest, then said, “Regardless of how much Miss desires, just mention it, as long as Miss will give a nod, that will not be a problem for me.”

When he said this, he felt like he was flying in the cloud.

Zhang Haoer’s eyes really cast a glance at him, everyone else was looking at him.

Master Niu's bones were melted by her look, he only hated himself why he did not show his extravagance earlier, to let this woman know that Master Niu would lavishly spend, the more so if the flower would submit.

Zhang Haoer asked suddenly, “You want me to nod, actually to do what?”

This woman actually could really feign ignorance.

Master Niu had laughed, as he slyly looked, "What I want to do, don't you understand?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Do you want me to accompany you to sleep?"

Master Niu laughed and said, "Miss Zhang really speaks frankly."

Zhang Haoer beckoned to someone outside and said, "Pull in Jin Hua."

Jin Hua was a female dog, a fat strong b1tch.

Zhang Haoer said with a supple voice, "Regardless of how much Master Niu wants, just mention it, by all means, as long as Master Niu is willing to accompany my Jin Hua to sleep, that will not be a problem for me."

Ouyang MeiGong laughed suddenly, he felt happier than Master Niu just now.

Master Niu's face was blue and red, like the blue veins had all exploded.

Gentleman Ji had continued to fold his arms, coldly looking from the side, and now he leisurely walked forward and said lightly: "You two do not need to be angry, since Miss Zhang has seen me here, naturally she must be waiting for me."

He exhibited natural elegance as he beckoned to Zhang Haoer and said, "Whatever you waited for has already come."

Zhang Haoer suddenly did not speak.

Everyone thought that she would scold him coarsely, but suddenly she did not speak at all.

Because she knew that even if she scolded him coarsely, it still would not be ominous enough.

But this way, this simply mad person could go half dead, could go crazy.

Not only Gentleman Ji's face had reddened, his neck seemed to increase twice as big, the "gentleman" appearance he showed just now, had disappeared completely without a trace.

The most exasperating part, although Zhang Haoer had not spoken, he had actually known what Zhang Haoer must say.

It was exasperating, because he also knew that the others also knew.

Zhang Haoer cast a look at Jin Hua and him alternately, like she considered both of them as her pets.

Gentleman Ji finally could not bear with it and shouted, "What do you have to say? Just say it?"

Zhang Haoer did not say anything.

But Jin Hua actually rushed at him with loud barks "woof", and continued to wag his tail in front of him.

Gentleman Ji was greatly incensed, "You cur, scram."

Jin Hua "woof" louder.

Gentleman Ji's foot kicked at him and shouted, "Roll away!"

Jin Hua continued, "Woof!"

Master Niu could not bear laughing and said, "This person has finally found an object that will talk to him."

Someone also said easily, "They seemed to chat congenially."

Gentleman Ji felt even madder, the eyes became red, and swung the sword at this unseen person, "chop", the sword had attacked, the sword had pierced forward.

A pair of chopsticks suddenly flew and hit the back of his hands.

When his sword fell, Jin Hua had bitten his hand too, more than just skin-deep.

Gentleman Ji felt like a fish inside the water, his whole body was drenched by cold sweat.

Where did these chopsticks fly from?

Jin Hua held on to the chopsticks, and turned around to deliver them back. It seemed to know whose chopsticks they were.

Everyone knew then, but no one could believe that.

Gentleman Ji's sword was not slow, who would think that Zhang Haoer had moved much quicker than this famous swordsman.

Zhang Haoer frowned and handed the chopsticks to a girl behind her and said, "This chopsticks cannot be used anymore."

Zhang Haoer finally spoke.

She was patting Jin Hua lightly on the head and said with a supple voice, "The young little darling, do not be angry, I do not dislike your mouth touching it, just that individual's hand had smeared it."

Perhaps this was why Zhang Haoer was more expensive than other women.

Not only she understood when to say something, but also what to say to each person.

Most importantly, she also understood when not to speak.

Tian SiSi thought that this person was really extremely interesting.

She never stop smiling when she returned to her room, she could not stop.

Yang Fan rented the room, although it was not too good, and it was not too big, but it was still a room.

Tian SiSi had begun to worry continually on where she could sleep, not only eating was a problem, she also found out that sleeping could also become a problem.

Who knew that Yang Fan had suddenly shown mercy, he had unexpectedly rented the room for her in the inn, moreover he had also looked after her very well, he had wanted her to sleep earlier.

“This pig cannot be too bad a person after all.”

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, she secretly smiled, and then she thought of something else very funny and she held her laughter until she had to bend her waist.

“If Tian Xin marries him, a small pouted mouth, a big head, that must be a strange match.”

As for her, she would certainly never marry this kind of person.

A person like Lady Tian, certainly must find a great person such as Qin Ge.

Thinking of Qin Ge and the fluttering red silk handkerchief brought a little blush and hotness to her face.

The room was very quiet, no wind.

This hot summer day in June was so stuffy.

Tian SiSi really wished she could remove all her clothes, but she also did not have such big courage.

She wanted to sleep, and yet could not fall asleep.

She lay down, and then crawled up again.

“The floor is certainly very cool, barefooted can also be good.”

She took off her shoe, and also her socks, looking at her own feet, she had forgotten to stand.

She looked at them a little crazily.

When a woman looked at her own feet, she could frequently indulge in flights of fancy, in particular if these feet belonged to an attractive woman.

The feet seemed to incite some mysterious longing to stretch one's secret fantasy.

Tian SiSi's feet were very attractive, at least she could appreciate them very much.

But could others also appreciate them very much?

She did not know.

Very few people could see her feet, certainly she could not let others have this kind of opportunity, and yet sometimes in her heart, she actually secretly wished for others to like looking at them.

Suddenly a mosquito flew from the bed and bit her foot.

This mosquito at least also appreciated her feet very much.

Therefore she had not killed this mosquito, only waved her hand to expel the mosquito as it finished.

The mosquito had bitten once in the sole of her feet, and suddenly she felt very itchy, like she needed to scratch it. When she did not scratch it, it became itchier. She had to scratch it.

“Dead mosquito, it has to bite me in that place.”

By the time she wanted to kill this mosquito, the mosquito had already flown somewhere else.

Still biting her lips, she put on the socks.

But it still itched, like the heart also felt itchy.

She bit her lips, took the socks off again, closed her eyes, and with an effort scratched at the place, only then she could give a long sigh, but now she felt that her clothes were soaking wet.

If only she could jump into the well with plenty of cold water!

After pinching the spot that the mosquito had bitten, Tian SiSi jumped on one foot to the window and shoved open the window gently with her hand.

Outside, there was a cat and a dog, a tree, the wall and its shadow, the flies flying here and there... Everything really, except water in a well.

She could only find cold water in a cup on the table. So she drank that.

Outside, the night watchman struck the gong twice. She was so startled that she nearly swallowed the cup.

Twice, only twice, she thought that the start of the day was almost coming. Who knew that in this hot summer night, the night just started.

The room suddenly became really hot, how would this endless, endless night pass away?

Perhaps if there had been a person to chat with, it would have been much better.

She suddenly hoped that Yang Fan would accompany her to chat with, but as soon as that big-headed ghost ate his fullest, he would probably go to his room, close the door, and be asleep by now, sleeping like a dead pig.

He ate to the fullest and then slept, didn't he look like a pig already?

"I will not let him sleep, I must wake him up by making some noise."

When Lady Tian wanted something, if anyone could stop her, that would be a miracle.

And miracles happened very seldom.

Opening the door quietly, she unexpectedly could not see anybody outside.

In this kind of hot weather, without any wind in the courtyard, that some people could sleep with the door closed, was really something unexpected.

Yang Fan's room was in the opposite, the door was closed tightly, but there was some light inside the room.

"Somehow he manages to fall asleep without blowing off the lantern, is he not afraid that it will catch fire at midnight and make him a roasted pig?"

Tian SiSi felt mad but also tickled as she passed through the courtyard quietly.

It felt very cool.

She discovered suddenly that not only she had forgotten to put on her shoes, that she still held her socks in her hand.

Looking at her own bare feet, after a few moments, a smile suddenly came up.

She smiled like a fox who had just eaten three catties of sugar, full of sly intention.

She bundled the socks and put it inside her clothes, and just went barefooted.

Why couldn't she see a person barefooted? Who was born already with the shoes on?

If Lady Tian wanted something, she certainly could find a very good excuse.

The door was closed very tightly without any seam.

She wanted to knock on the door, but her hands fell behind her back.

"If I knock on the door, he will not pay any attention, once this pig falls asleep, even if the heaven collapses, he still won't pay attention."

Tian SiSi rotated her eyes.

"Why can't I just rush into the room and frighten him to wake him up?"

Thinking how Yang Fan could get scared by her prompted her not to think any longer.

She hit the door open and rushed inside – this inn was not a bank, the door could not be that strong.

She only hoped Yang Fan's heart was strong enough, that he did not get scared to death.

Yang Fan had not been scared to death, he did not even seem startled, he continued to sit on the chair, like a piece of wood.

Indeed, his body served as a chair for someone.

A very attractive person.
A woman.

Zhang Haoer also had not had a scare.

She smiled very sweetly with very refined appearance, if another woman had sat on a chair in the living room, her appearance could not be more refined.

Not only she sat on Yang Fan, but her hands were on Yang Fan's neck.

The only person who got scared, was Tian Sisi.

She stood there with an open mouth, big eyes, as if she had just swallowed down a whole egg.

Zhang Haoer's clear-as-spring eyes wandered on her body and said sweetly, "You know each other?"

Yang Fan smiled, nodded.

Zhang Haoer said, "Who is she?"

Yang Fan said, "Come, let me introduce you, this Miss Zhang, is not only my betrothed, this is my wife whom I will marry."

He introduced his future wife while a prostitute sat on his leg, as if it was in a big formal ceremony, a well-organized encounter, he did not show any shame or regret, nor did he show any inclination to shove off Zhang Haoer.

Fortunately Tian SiSi had agreed to his marriage plan, although no one could blame her to feel strongly irritated by this. If she had not agreed to his marriage plan, she would have been half-dead with anger at him.

This big-headed ghost really had not given her any face.

What was so exasperating, Zhang Haoer unexpectedly also did not plan to stand up.

She only winked an eye at Tian SiSi and said, "You will really be the future Madame Yang?"

The most exasperating part was Tian SiSi could not disprove it, she was so mad she could not say anything.

Which was like giving a tacit agreement.

Zhang Haoer laughed softly, "I thought it was a female robber who broke in and crashed the door. It turned out it was really the future Madame Yang, oh I fail to be polite, will you please sit down?"

She patted Yang Fan's leg, and also said with a smile, "Do you want me to give up this seat for you?"

Tian SiSi suddenly no longer thought that this person was interesting, she only wished she could give her a good slap.

But she saw how Yang Fan felt really satisfied with himself, and knew that she could not afford to get angry.

"The more angry I am, the more they get satisfied with themselves."

Lady Tian was a smart person after all, as soon as she thought of it, her face had revealed a smiling face immediately.

Although her smiling face was not very natural, but it was still a smiling face.

Zhang Haoer's glance seemed to have turned into a sugar brush that had sugarcoated her body.

Tian SiSi became even more at ease, unexpectedly she really looked for a chair to sit down, and smilingly said, "You don't need to pay attention to me, also don't restrict yourself, I just sit here for a while, then I must go."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "You are really a natural, if all the woman in the world can look as natural as you, a man can certainly live longer."

She unexpectedly reached out for a yard after giving an inch, her hands circled Yang Fan's neck again, and charmingly said, "If you can marry such a virtuous madame in the future, you will really be lucky."

Tian SiSi imitated her example and with a crooked charming smile she said leisurely, "Actually you do not need to praise me too much. If I had really wanted to marry him, I would have been pulling out all your hairs right now."

Zhang Haoer's eyes blinked and said, "You do not plan to marry him?"

Tian Sisi said with a smile, "Even if all the men in the world men were dead, I still would not marry him."

She also sighed suddenly and muttered, "I just wonder why a woman can like this pig so much."

She seemed to just think aloud, although she said it softly, other people could still hear it.

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "That is called: radish and green vegetable have their own unique flavor."

She also sighed and muttered, "Some little girl thought she knew all about men, not knowing which one is good, which one is bad, and then want to give her judgement, now that is strange."

She also looked like she was thinking aloud but her voice was just loud enough for the others to hear.

Tian SiSi's eyes blinked and said with a smile, "You have seen a lot of men?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Not too many, but probably around 1,800."

Tian SiSi gave a startled appearance and said, "That is indeed many, you deserve the title of an expert in men."

She was smiling sweetly, "I have also heard that there is only one kind of woman who can see so many men, but I do not know what kind of job does Miss Zhang actually have?"

When she said the words, she felt very satisfied with herself.

"Right now how will you reply to me, can you still be so spirited?"

In any case, Zhang Haoer's line of work was never an honorable occupation.

Zhang Haoer smiled prettily and said with a smile, "Don't laugh at me, I am just a young philanthropist."

The word philanthropist was not really common at that time, not many people would call themselves a philanthropist.

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, "What does a philanthropist do?"

Zhang Haoer said, "There are many kinds of philanthropist, I am focusing on the one that provides relieve for men."

Tian SiSi had smiled and said, "That is but actually very interesting, I do not know actually what you do to provide relieve for men?"

Zhang Haoer said, "If not for me, a lot of men probably would not find a genuine woman all of their lives, therefore I go as far as possible to comfort them, let them be happy."

She said with a smile, "You know, if a man does not have the comfort of a genuine woman, it would be very pitiful, unfortunately there are only a few genuine women."

This person actually really understood how to toot her own horn.

Tian SiSi rotated her eyes and said with a smile: "If not for you, I am afraid the money that belongs to those men will not come out of their pockets easily."

Zhang Haoer said, "I do not want men to become misers, therefore I let them learn about generosity. "

She looked at Tian SiSi, also said with a smile, "Would you like men to become slaves to their money?"

These prickly logical banters were all sallied back and forth, as if one wanted to kill the other.

But the two faces actually showed only smiles.

Yang Fan took a look at Zhang Haoer, then at Tian SiSi, back and forth, his face showed immense satisfaction at what was going on, as if he really appreciated this act.

"This pig seems to have just eaten the ginseng instead."
Tian SiSi really could not find a way to make him mad.

Zhang Haoer also sighed suddenly, and muttered, "Time, it is time to go back to sleep."

Although her mouth said it, she did not budge to go back to sleep.

Tian SiSi certainly understood whom she wanted to go back to sleep.

"You want me to go, if I don't go, see what you can do to me?"

Actually she did not necessarily know it either why she did not just go.

If her heart felt a little sour, even if you killed her, she would not want to acknowledge it.

Zhang Haoer said those words, yet she did not obtain any response, so she had to say it again for the second time.

She looked out the window intentionally and said, "What time is it now? Probably no longer early?"

Tian SiSi's eyes blinked and said, "Does Miss Zhang really have to go back?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "I don't really have anything to do right now, so chatting here is not a problem, you?"

Tian SiSi's sweetly said, "I am also all right, I am not anxious to go."

These two seemed to have decided that, "If you do not go, I will not go too."

But they had exhausted their topics, they did not want to dwell on pleasantries, so they were just sitting around.

Yang Fan suddenly gently shoved Zhang Haoer and said with a smile, "You both chat here, I will walk out and take a stroll, if two women have a man in between, they will not talk instead."

He really stood up unexpectedly, and walked out leisurely.

"You will not go, then I will go."

Coping with a woman, there was no other better method.

"I did not know that this pig is a slick one."

Tian SiSi hated him so that her teeth felt itchy, she wanted to go now, but was too embarrassed to do it now.

If she did not go, she really did not have anything to say to Zhang Haoer.

The air had become really stuffy, so stuffy that her breathing became more labored.

Zhang Haoer said suddenly, “Miss Tian this time you come out, where do you want to go?”

Tian Sisi said, “Chiangnan.”

END OF CHAPTER 10

Chapter 11: Neat Arrangement

One

Zhang Haoer said, "Chiangnan may be a really good place, actually Miss Tian wants to go there for leisure? Or looking for a person?"

Tian Sisi said, "Looking for a person."

Now Yang Fan had left, she did not have the mood to exhibit the smiling face and the duplicity.

Zhang Haoer was actually smiling, sweetly said, "I also have a lot of acquaintances in Chiangnan, the little one or a famous person, I know all of them."

This statement actually really moved Tian Sisi.

Tian Sisi said, "You know a lot of people, do you also know Qin Ge?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "A person with acquaintances, there are only a few who do not know Qin Ge."

Tian SiSi's eyes shone immediately and said, "I heard this person run around from place to place, it will not be easy to find him."

Zhang Haoer said, "You are going to Chiangnan to find him?"

Tian Sisi said, "Mmm."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Then you are lucky to have run into me, otherwise you will just run a fruitless errand."

Tian Sisi said, "Why?"

Zhang Haoer said, "He is no longer in Chiangnan."

Tian Sisi said, "YouYou know where he is?"

Zhang Haoer nodded and said, "I saw him the day before yesterday."

She said it nonchalantly as if she met Qin Ge very frequently.

Tian SiSi felt envious and jealous, nipping her lips she said, "Is he your neighbor?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Yes. Not too far from me."

Tian SiSi hesitated for a while before finally speaking slowly, "Can you tell me where he is?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I can't."

Tian SiSi was stunned, after a while, she stood up and walked to the door.

Zhang Haoer smiled suddenly and said easily, "But actually I can lead you to find him."

Tian SiSi stopped in her stride immediately, happily said, "Really? You are not deceiving me?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Why do I want to deceive you."

Tian SiSi suddenly thought that she was a good person.

If Lady Tian felt something inside, it would be difficult for her not to say it so she turned back to face Zhang Haoer, pulled up Zhang Haoer's hand, and sweetly said, "You really are a good person."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "You are always a girl who is very pleasing to my eyes."

Tian Sisi said, "YouWhen can you bring me to find him?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I will do the necessary arrangement — but I am afraid some people will not let you go."

Tian Sisi said, "Who isn't willing to let me go?"

Zhang Haoer referred to the person outside, and smartly said, "The pig."

Tian SiSi had also smiled, with a pouted mouth she said, "Why won't he let me go? He is not qualified to control me."

Zhang Haoer said, "You really do not fear him?"

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, "What fear, who is afraid of that big-headed ghost?"

Zhang Haoer said, "If you dare, I will bring you now, perhaps you will be able to see Qin Ge tomorrow."

Tian SiSi was very happy, "Then we go now, who doesn't dare is a small puppy."

Zhang Haoer's eyes blinked and said with a smile, "Then we sneaked off from the window, let that devil come back when he cannot find us and worry about it, do you agree?"

Tian Sisi said with a smile, "Very good."

If she could let Yang Fan worry about something, she thought it would be very good.

Two

Thereupon Lady Tian started on her new course.

Not only the road was cooler compared to the room, it was also much cooler than the courtyard.

The wind blew from the street corner, blew from behind them.

Tian SiSi deeply sighed, but suddenly felt her feet very cold, and only noticed that she was still barefooted.

That pig unexpectedly had not noticed her feet from the beginning to the end.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth in secret and said, "I I should go back?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Why do you need to go back?"

She smiled, also said, "You have no need to worry. He won't really worry about you. My people know where I will be, they will certainly tell him tomorrow."

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth, sneeringly said, "I don't care if he lives or dies, I only want to go back to put on my shoes."

Zhang Haoer said, "I have all kinds of shoes, many of them."

Tian Sisi said with a smile: "Should I just walk like this?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I know of a place where we can hire a carriage."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "You are really competent, you seem to know everything."

Zhang Haoer also sighed and said, "That is a necessity, if a woman wants to survive outside, she needs to know the way to take care of herself, otherwise men will bully her."

Tian Sisi said, "All men are not good."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "The good ones are not that many."

Tian SiSi asked suddenly, "But how did you know that I am surnamed Tian? Did that big-headed ghost tell you?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Mmm."

Tian Sisi said, "What else did he say to you?"

Zhang Haoer said, "What a man tell behind you, you should not listen to it."

Tian Sisi said, "Why should it bother me? Anything he said, in any case, I just considered that he was breaking the wind."

Zhang Haoer hesitatingly said, "He had not said anything actually, he only said that you young lady's temperament was too big, if it did not get taught well, later it would become more serious."

Tian SiSi retorted back, "This big-headed ghost, he would teach me? Why?"

Zhang Haoer said, "He added sooner or later you would marry him, therefore he had no alternative but to teach you."

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "Do not listen to him break the wind, you think I will marry that kind of person?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Certainly you can't, in what way he matches you?"

Tian SiSi cast a glance at her, also replied suddenly, "But you seem to be on good terms with him."

Zhang Haoer smiled and said, "I am on good terms with a lot of men."

Tian Sisi said, "But he seems to be a little special, is it?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Because I am an old friend of him."

Tian Sisi said, "You have known him for a long time?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Mmm."

After a while, she smiled and said, "Do not think that he is an honest and good-natured person, although he looks honest, actually you just cannot simply believe all his words."

Tian SiSi said lightly, "I have already said, whatever he says, I will just consider that he is breaking the wind."

Although her mouth said that, her heart seemed a little uncomfortable, it was one thing for her to scold him, it was another thing for someone else to scold him.

"In any event, this big-headed ghost has helped me significantly."

Lady Tian was not an ungrateful person, once she had decided on something and the opportunity came up, she would certainly repay this gratitude.

In her mind there seemed to come up an image, "That pig is being beaten in all parts of his body by that crawling person, then suddenly Miss Tian appears riding a white horse, her hand wields a whip that will slay all the demons and monsters."

Then the image continued, "The pig kneels in front of Lady Tian's white horse, and asks Lady Tian to marry to him, Lady Tian only sneers, pulls back her whip from him and

urges the horse to go. She has a red silk handkerchief around her neck, anyone else under the sky is inferior to her.”

Thinking until that point, Lady Tian’s face could not stop revealing a lovable smile.

“Perhaps I should not pull back the whip too heavily, just gently knocks it on his big head, and that's the end of it.”

By now, there was really sound of hoofbeats on the street.

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, “Looks like our luck is not really bad, no need to find it, the carriage has already come on its own.”

Some people’s luck seemed very good ever since they were born.

The carriage that arrived was not only empty, it was also new, very attractive and comfortable.

The driver was also a very friendly young man, moreover he also wore the red silk handkerchief.

The bright red silk handkerchief that fluttered in the night breeze.

Tian SiSi looked somewhat stunned.

Seeing this fluttering red silk handkerchief was like looking at Qin Ge.

The carriage driver looked a little embarrassed by this and said something with a smile to cover the awkwardness, “Miss does not want to come aboard?”

Tian SiSi had blushed red, and could not bear saying, “Looking at your red silk handkerchief, you also admire Qin Ge very much? “

The carriage driver said with a smile, "I certainly admire him, in jiang-hu, there is no one who doesn't admire Hero Qin."

Tian Sisi said, "You have seen him?"

The carriage driver sighed and said, "We are humble people, how will we have such good luck?"

Tian Sisi said, "You want to see him very much?"

The carriage driver said, "I really want to see Hero Qin, if I can I am willing to go without my food for three days."

Tian SiSi smiled.

Hearing others praise Qin Ge was simply like hearing others praise her too.

At this, she smiled and said, "I am going to meet him, I am his friend."

She did not consider this a lie, because in her mind, Qin Ge was not only her good friend, moreover he was already her sweetheart, her future husband.

The carriage driver was immediately filled with envy, and sighed, "Miss is really lucky..."

Tian SiSi felt so light she could fly.

She also felt very lucky, because the person she selected, was certainly not a wrong choice.

Qin Ge was really a great person.

Three

The carriages and the horses stopped.

When the carriage and the horses stopped, the light of early dawn had appeared in the east.

Tian SiSi was having a dream, a warm and happy dream. Her dream certainly would not lack Qin Ge.

She was not really willing to wake up from the dreamland, but Zhang Haoer was actually shaking her shoulder.

Tian SiSi rubbed open her eyes, and looked out the window.

Red double doors shone brightly in the light of early dawn, two giant stone lions squatted in front of the doors.

Tian SiSi's eyes blinked and asked, "Where are we? What is this place?"

Zhang Haoer said, "This is my humble home."

Tian SiSi smiled.

When Zhang Haoer uttered this word "my humble home", she felt it was very funny, very interesting.

She probably considered everything very interesting just now.

Zhang Haoer said, "Why do you laugh?"

Tian Sisi said with a laugh, "I am laughing at you because you are too polite, if this kind of place is 'my humble home', what kind of house then should not be considered as my humble home? "

Zhang Haoer had also smiled, smiled very happily.

Hearing others praise her own house was always a very happy thought.

Tian SiSi actually had blushed a little, she suddenly found that she had also learned to be falsely polite.

Anyone who saw this kind of place could not help but praise it several times.

On the red door, the copper door handle was bright like gold, the tall wall enclosed the wide garden, the porch pillar was filled with carvings, the window was covered with the snow white patterned paper, the reflection of the courtyard greenery transformed the color into light blue green.

In the courtyard, the flower fragrance permeated throughout, the birds were twittering, a pair of swallows were making a nest at the top of the house.

Tian Sisi said, "This house is yours?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Mmm."

Tian Sisi said, "You bought it?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I just bought it in the last two years, the previous owner was a nobleman, who had so much knowledge, but he was just a bookworm, therefore I bought this very cheaply."

Tian SiSi sighed, also said with a smile, "Looks like being a philanthropist' is really useful, especially compared to knowing so many things."

Zhang Haoer's face seemed to blush a little, she turned her head to cough gently.

Tian SiSi also knew that she had spoken improperly, with an embarrassed smile she said, "Qin Ge will come here today?"

Zhang Haoer said, "I will take you to your sleeping room behind. If he doesn't come, I will find him then."

The back garden was more beautiful than the front courtyard.

A small pavilion with a red fence and green tiled rooftop looked like a painting, the inside also looked like a painting.

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "This place is beautiful."

Zhang Haoer said, "When the weather is too hot, I always feel disinclined, I usually rest in here during summer."

Tian Sisi said, "You really do enjoy your life."

Actually the place where she usually lived was no different than here, she had her luck but she did not want to enjoy that, instead she insisted on suffering hardship outside her home.

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "If you like this place, I will give this to you, later when you get married to Qin Ge, this place might become your nuptial chamber?"

Tian SiSi's eyes seemed to become red suddenly, she pulled her hand and said, "Why are you so kind to me?"

Zhang Haoer said with a voice, "I have already said, you look very pleasing to my eyes, this is called fate."

She patted Tian SiSi 's hand, also said with a smile: "Now you should take a bath first, then sleep well; when Qin Ge comes, I will awaken you, you have to dress up attractively."

Tian SiSi lowered her head, looked at the dirty clothes on her body, at the bare feet, and could not restrain herself from emitting a gentle sigh.

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "You are about as tall as me, I will find some attractive clothes for you, and Xiao Qing will deliver it."

Tian Sisi said, "Xiao Qing?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Xiao Qing is a servant girl I just bought, she is very intelligent, if you like her, I may give her to you too."

Tian SiSi looked at her, in her heart she felt unspeakable gratitude.

Regardless of their line of work, there must be a few kind people, and she had finally found a genuinely kind person.

There was a painting on the wall.

It was a painting of a pavilion amidst the white clouds, like the dwelling place of celestial beings. Under the celestial mountain, the water ran down lavishly along the carpet of green grass, and a pair of young man and woman are walking arm in arm. What kind of blissful life was this?

There was a saying underneath:

"Only envy the pair of man and woman, do not envy the immortals."

Good beautiful drawing. Good beautiful fantasy place.

"One day in the future, I will look like this with Qin Ge, yet I do not want to be like deities."

Tian SiSi looked at that painting while thinking here and there, when someone gently knocked on the door.

The door was unlatched.

Tian Sisi said, "Is it Xiao Qing?.....Come in."

A cute servant in red brought several folded bright clothes. While lowering her head she said, "Xiao Qing will listen to Miss' instruction."

She had big eyes, a small mouth, which still look like a pout even when not angry.

Tian SiSi almost could not bear calling her loudly.

Tian Xin!

This cute servant girl was unexpectedly Tian Xin.

Tian SiSi ran over and grasped her, the pile of clothes tumbled all over the place.

“The dead servant girl, the dead little rascal, how did you come here? When did you come?”

This servant girl stared at her with big eyes, she seemed very startled and said, “ I came here two years ago.”

Tian SiSi ridiculed her, “Little rascal, do you want to deceive me? You think I will not recognize you?”

This servant girl’s eyes blinked and said, “Miss has seen me before?”

Tian Sisi said, “You haven't seen me before?”

This servant girl said, “I haven’t.”

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, “You do not know me?”

This servant girl said, “No.”

Tian SiSi were more than a little disturbed, rubbing her eyes she said, “YouAren't you Tian Xin?”

This servant girl said, “I am called Xiao Lan, Xiao for small, Lan for orchid.”

Looking at her serious face, she did not look like she was telling lies or cracking a joke.

Tian Sisi said, “YouIs it possible that you have been confused by a ghost?”

Xiao Qing looked at her, like looking at a mad person and did not want to talk to her again.

Lowering her head she said, "If Miss does not have any other instruction, I will start preparing the water for the bath."

She did not wait for any other words and had run out like a wisp of smoke.

Tian SiSi was stunned.

"Isn't she really Tian Xin?"

"If she were not Tian Xin, why does she look so similar to Tian Xin, even the pouty mouth was similar like coming from the same mold?"

"Is there a chance that two people can be so similar with each other?"

Tian SiSi did not believe it, but now she had no alternative but to believe it.

Two very vigorous and healthy female servants, lifting a very attractive bathtub entered the room.

In the trough, the water was limpid, fragrant, and hot.

Xiao Qing holding a box of washing soap and a piece of white towel was following behind them and said, "Do you want me to serve Miss to take a bath?"

Tian SiSi was still staring at her, shaking her head, and suddenly loudly said, "You really are not Tian Xin?"

Xiao Qing was scared, she started to shake her head, as if she saw a ghost, and slid out.

Tian SiSi sighed, with a rueful smile she said, "I really saw a ghostIs there such a coincidence in the world?....."

Although her heart was filled with suspicion, but that trough of hot water was actually even more enticing.

Any woman who had not taken a bath for three days also would not be able to resist this kind of enticement.

Tian SiSi sighed, and started to untie the button slowly. There was a very big mirror at the opposite, which showed her slender moving reflection.

Perhaps her curves were not as mature as Zhang Haoer, but her skin was actually smoother, the flesh was actually more solid, moreover it had the gentle suppleness which only a maiden could boast of.

Her legs were very straight, the ankles were delicate, the shape was exquisite.

Her body had not been hugged by a man.

She was still waiting, waiting for a man who was worth waiting for, regardless of how long she had to wait for him.

Perhaps Qin Ge was this man.

Her face exuded a red blush, almost as hot as the water in the trough.

The clothes next to her skin had been soaked by her perspiration, her easy curve was reflected clearly in the mirror. She untied the top of her clothes slowly, when her entire body stiffened suddenly!

There was a big and comfortable bed in the room.

A tall silky curtain enclosed the bed, complete with the pink tassels.

Tian SiSi suddenly saw from the mirror two small holes on the curtain.

With sparks coming from the small holes.

Eye sparks.

A person was hiding behind the curtain peeping at her.

Tian SiSi was so angry that her whole body went numb.

She tried to bite her lips trying to suppress her anger as she untied the first button, and slowly started on the second

one

Suddenly, she turned around and rushed there to pull at the curtain.

When the curtain parted, there was really a person behind that.

A motionless person.

When a person took a peep at an adult woman taking a bath, if he were to be discovered, he must be really surprised.

But this person was not only motionless, his face did not even show any surprise.

Was this a person, or a sculptured stone carving?

Four

But Tian SiSi knew this individual.

Not only she knew that he was an actual person, moreover she had also recognized him.

“Mr. Ge!”

That malicious ghost Mr. Ge, haunting her everywhere, unexpectedly had appeared here!

Tian SiSi was so frightened, her throat could not make any sound, her face stiffened, and her whole body could not move.

Mr. Ge had not moved.

Not only his feet that had not moved, also his hands and everything else, even his eyeballs.

A pair of malicious ghost's eyeballs stared at Tian SiSi without any expression.

But the ones without any expression were even scarier than the ones with expression.

Tian SiSi finally could move with great difficulty, and turned around to run outside.

Running to the door, Mr. Ge had not moved.

Why didn't he pursue?

Did he know that Tian SiSi would not be able to escape anyway?

Tian SiSi hid behind the door outside, quietly looking inside, and found that Mr. Ge's dead gray eyes were still staring, and he was still standing at the original place.

"Is it possible that this person has suddenly fallen under a spell?"

Although Tian SiSi did not dare to believe that she had such good luck, although she still feared him in her heart, but if this devil had really fallen under a spell, why shouldn't she use this opportunity for revenge?

This enticement was really big, almost irresistible.

Tian SiSi nipped her lips, gradually she walked slowly towards him.

Mr. Ge was still motionless, the eyes stared at the original place.

Tian SiSi slowly bent her waist, took up the box of washing powder from the bathtub's small stool.

The box was very hard, as hard as the silver taels.

Whoever got knocked by such a hard box would undoubtedly jump away with pain.

Tian SiSi expended her whole strength at throwing the box at him.

"Crack", the box hit Mr. Ge.

Mr. Ge had not moved, nothing moved including the eyeballs, as if he didn't feel a thing.

But actually his head has been injured.

If a person's head was injured, if he did not feel it, then he must have been as good as dead.

Tian SiSi had also thrown the small stool.

This hit Mr. Ge just like before, the small hole became a big hole, the blood flowed out.

But he was still motionless.

Tian SiSi relaxed, suddenly she rushed forward, “pak”, she slapped him.

He was motionless.

Tian SiSi smiled, and maliciously said with a smile, “Surnamed Ge, I did not expect you to fall on my lap today.”

Lady Tian was not a very vindictive person, her heart was not evil, her hands were not violent.

But she really hated Mr. Ge to the bone.

She pulled Mr. Ge’s hair, put him down and slapped him hard back and forth.

The hot water for the bath was still hot and steaming.

If a person's head was immersed in such hot water, the feeling couldn’t be that good.

Tian SiSi had immersed Mr. Ge's head.

There was no bubble.

Did he suffocate? Was he already dead?

Tian SiSi’s hands became merciful and raised his head.

His eyes were still staring ahead, without any expression.

Tian SiSi felt a little nervous and said loudly, “Hey, can you hear me speak?.....Are you dead?”

Suddenly a young voice was heard laughing, “ He is not dead yet, but he could not hear you speak actually.”

Her laugh was like a silver bell.

Actually only very few people could have such a pleasant laugh, most people laughed like copper bells, some might even sound like broken bells.

Tian SiSi did not need to turn around to know that Zhang Haoer had come.

The laughter was one of the most important feature of “a philanthropist”.

Zhang Haoer was a great person in her line of work, therefore her laughter was very pleasant to hear and also very attractive.

Tian SiSi said bitterly, “You know this person?”

Zhang Haoer shook her head, sneeringly said, “I know this kind of person.”

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, “Then, how did he get here behind the curtain?”

Zhang Haoer’s eyes blinked and said, “You really do not know how he got here?”

Tian Sisi said, “I certainly do not know.”

Zhang Haoer said, “I do not know too.”

She smiled suddenly and said, “But I actually know how he can turn into this.”

Tian Sisi said, “Say it quickly.”

Zhang Haoer said, “Couldn't you see that his accupoints were sealed?”

Tian SiSi realized now that Mr. Ge had his accupoints really sealed, his appearance was really like that, moreover his accupoints that were sealed were not just one or two.

But Mr. Ge's wugong was not weak, she knew it very well, if someone could seal 7 to 8 of his accupoints without him realizing it, that was almost unbelievable.

Tian SiSi could not bear saying, "Is it you that has sealed his accupoints?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "How can it be me? Where do I get such marvelous skills?"

Tian Sisi said, "Then who is it if it isn't you?"

Zhang Haoer said easily, "You go ahead and guess, if you cannot guess correctly, I will tell you then."

Tian Sisi said, "I cannot guess."

While saying "I cannot guess", her heart had made a guess, she suddenly jumped and said, "Is it Qin Ge?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Right."

Tian SiSi stood with an open mouth, stared with big eyes, as if she almost fainted.

After a very long time, she sighed and said, "HeHe had already come?"

Zhang Haoer said, "He had already come for half a day."

She continued to explain, "When he came, he saw this person stealthily moving to this small pavilion, when this person secretly made holes in the curtain, he had sealed his accupoints."

Behind the curtain there was really a small window, he must have entered through this window.

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "What is strange is that there were so many things happening behind the curtain, unexpectedly you did not hear anything – were you having a dream at the time?"

Tian SiSi was indeed having a dream. A dream that she could not tell anyone.

She blushed, lowered her head and said, "What did he do next?"

Zhang Haoer said, "After he sealed this person's accupoints, then he went to find me..."

Tian SiSi had interrupted her fiercely, "Why didn't he tell me at that time, so as to avoid I am being ... by this person"

"Peeped" or spied on, but she couldn't say it.

Zhang Haoer said, "Although he is not a gentleman, but when he saw a girl taking off her clothes, he felt too embarrassed to see you."

Tian SiSi's face was feeling hot, lowering her head she said, "HeHe also saw me a moment ago?"

Zhang Haoer said, "There were two holes in the curtain, even if he were a gentleman, he would have still taken a peek once or twice."

Not only Tian SiSi's face felt hot, her heart also felt hot, she hesitantly said, "Did he mention me?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Not only he said that you were an attractive person, the legs were also very shapely."

Tian Sisi said, "Really?"

Zhang Haoer sighed and said, "Why isn't it real? If I were a man, I might also say similar words."

Tian SiSi hung her head, although feeling embarrassed, she smiled secretly in her heart.

Any young girl who were commended by the person she loved would feel wonderful.

Zhang Haoer said, "I only ask you, do you want to see him now?"

Tian Sisi said, "Where is he at?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Downstairs, I already brought him here."

Without any words, Tian SiSi had turned around to go.

Zhang Haoer had held on to her, pouting towards her body, she said with a smile, "You want to go meet him just like that?"

Tian SiSi blushed and giggled.

Zhang Haoer said, "In your anxiety, you may not want to take a bath, but at least there should be some time to wash your feet."

The water was hot.

Mr. Ge was shoved under the bed.

Zhang Haoer said, "We will just put him here temporarily, later we should figure out a way to tidy him up."

Tian SiSi with the quickest speed washed her feet, but she took her time putting on the clothes.

All the clothes were very attractive.

Tian SiSi picked one and then the other, in the end she could only ask for Zhang Haoer's advice.

Zhang Haoer would naturally know what men liked better than most women.

Tian SiSi said, "Which one should I put on?"

Zhang Haoer looked at her with critical eyes and said with a smile, "In my opinion, you are most attractive when you do not wear any clothes."

She understood what men wanted very much, right?

Five

Tian SiSi went downstairs, her heart continuously thudded.

Actually how did Qin Ge look? Was he like her imagination, naturally elegant and handsome?

Tian SiSi only knew that his body had suffered a lot of scars from knife wounds.

But knife scars on a man's body were not ugly, they even showed his heroic spirit.

"In any event, she can finally meet the great person that is always in her mind."

Tian SiSi shut her eyes, stepped down the stairs, before she opened her eyes.

She saw Qin Ge!

Qin Ge and her imagination was entirely alike — — simply that kind of man whom young girls had dreamed of.

He was taller than an average person, but not too tall.

His shoulder was very wide, the waist was very thin, he looked vigorous and healthy, in particular when he wore that tight black clothes.

His eyes were big and bright, filled with enthusiasm.
A bright red silk handkerchief hung loosely on the neck.

Tian SiSi discovered suddenly that the red silk handkerchief on the neck, was indeed far more attractive than in any other place.

When Qin Ge looked at her, he showed a gentle happy face. Whoever saw his eyes, would no longer pay attention to the knife scars on his face

When he saw Tian SiSi, he stood with a happy face and good-natured smile.

He obviously enjoyed meeting Tian SiSi, no words was necessary.

Tian SiSi's heart palpitated fiercely.

She should walk on naturally, but suddenly she was transfixed at the bottom of the stairs.

She just realized she had forgotten something.

Since the beginning when she began to hear about Qin Ge, she had many kind of fantasies.

She certainly thought that she had imagined any possible things to do when she actually met Qin Ge, imagining how she would fall to his bosom, warm and happy.

She had even fantasized about the days they would live together. She would accompany him to drink, to play chess, to ride a horse, to make a living as a wandering fortune-teller. How she would take care of him since early in the morning, prepare a clean red silk handkerchief, and a delicious breakfast for him.

She had imagined all of these many, many times.

But she had forgotten about one important thing.

About what she should say to him when they met for the first time.

In her fantasy, when she saw Qin Ge, she just rushed into his bosom.

She certainly could not do such thing now, certainly she should talk to him first, but what should she actually say to him?

Qin Ge did not seem to know what to say either, he only smiled gently and said, "Please sit down."

Tian SiSi lowered her head, walked and sat down without saying anything.

She should take this opportunity to show to him how smart and intelligent she was, but at this critical juncture, her tongue could not say anything like a dumb bird.

She wished she could just cut off her own tongue and took it away for repair.

Zhang Haoer did not say anything, she just observed in the distance and laughed at them.

By now that cute servant girl Xiao Qing luckily had offered two cups of tea and some snacks.

She lowered her head in front of them, but as she neared Tian SiSi, she seemed to say two gentle words.

But Tian SiSi was so dizzy, she simply had not heard her at all.

Xiao Qing had to leave.

When she walked her mouth made such a big pout, like she was really worried and angry.

Zhang Haoer had finally walked gracefully to them, "Is this a wine gourd shop?"

Qin Ge was surprised and said, "Wine gourd shop?"

Zhang Haoer replied, "If it is not a wine gourd shop, how come there are two clamped-up big wine gourds?"

Qin Ge smiled and looked out of the window, "The weather is good outside."

Zhang Haoer said, "ha ha ha ha."

Qin Ge said, "What is the meaning of ha ha ha ha?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Nothing, it is a meaningless talk, nothing is gained by saying it."

Qin Ge smiled and said, "Then, what do you want me to say?"

Zhang Haoer's eyes blinked and said, "You should at least ask her this. Your surname? Given name? Where does your family stay? Do I also have to teach you?"

Qin Ge coughed gently twice and said, "What is your surname?"

Tian Sisi said, "I am surnamed Tian, called Tian SiSi."

Zhang Haoer frowned and said, "Is this some people speaking, or mosquito sounds?"

Tian SiSi had also smiled, at last the situation in the room was now more relaxed.

Qin Ge was just about to say something when that cute servant girl Xiao Qing lowered her head and offered the cups of tea again. But her hands became unsteady and the cups of tea had splashed on Tian SiSi's body.

Xiao Qing hurried forward to dab on her clothes, but she was so confused that she seemed to dab on many random parts of Tian SiSi's body.

Tian SiSi felt her hand took the opportunity to move towards her bosom although she did not look like an

awkward person.

Tian SiSi just felt that it was a little strange, Zhang Haoer had sunk her face and said, "What are you doing back and forth?"

Xiao Qing's complexion blanched a little, she lowered her head and said, "II was afraid Miss Tian's tea had become cold, I wanted to changed her cup."

Zhang Haoer calmly said, "Who asked you to be meddlesome, just go, don't come if I don't call you."

Xiao Qing said, "Yes."

She lowered her head, but before she left, she seemed to cast a sidelong glance at Tian SiSi, as if she wanted to tell Tian SiSi something.

What was she trying to tell Tian Sisi?

Tian SiSi had not figured out what happened, she just noticed her wet clothes and felt anxious about it, not really thinking about any other things.

Moreover, if this servant girl really had something to say, she should have said it when she delivered the clothes, she did not need to wait until now.

Tian SiSi nipped her lips and said suddenly, "II want to go and change clothes."

Qin Ge said immediately, "Please."

He stood up and smilingly said, "I should say goodbye, you need to rest too."

He left unexpectedly.

When he left, Zhang Haoer anxiously stamped her feet and said, "I can only arrange this meeting with great difficulty, how can you let this duck fly away just like that?"

Tian SiSi blushed and said, "II do not know, when I saw him, I became tongue-tied."

Zhang Haoer said, "Based on this appearance you want to lock him up? If other people see you act like this, they would have just backed away, what will you do then?"

Tian Sisi said, "Next timeNext time I will do better."

Zhang Haoer sneered and said, "Next time? I am afraid there are not many chances for you next time."

Tian SiSi pulled up her hand to beg her and said, "You have done so much good to me, please help me until we get to the bottom of it."

Zhang Haoer eyed her for a moment before "pfui" and laughed, "Let me ask you your impression then. Just be honest with me."

Tian SiSi's face became red and said, "My impression about him was certainly certainly very good."

Zhang Haoer said, "How good?"

Tian Sisi said, "Although he is famous, he is actually not arrogant, moreover he is really polite to me."

She seemed to be talking in her dream.

Zhang Haoer was staring at her and said, "What else?"

Tian SiSi sighed gently and said, "I cannot mention anything else, to be brief, he is a very good person. I have not chosen wrongly."

Zhang Haoer said, "You are willing to marry him?"

Tian SiSi bit her lip, did not speak.

Zhang Haoer said, "This is certainly important for me. If you are not willing to marry him, then it is of no concern to me."

Tian SiSi became anxious, blushing she said, "When I didn't speak, didn't you understand?"

Zhang Haoer laughed "pfui", shook her head and said, "You girl, this is not a seemingly behavior." She sternly said, "Since you want to marry to him, grasp the opportunity well."

Tian SiSi finally nodded.

Zhang Haoer said, "The opportunity is not that many, I can only detain him for 1-2 days."

Tian Sisi said, "1-2 days? Only 1-2 days, how will that be enough?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Two days are already 48 hours, if it were me, two days should be enough."

Tian Sisi said, "But I really do not know what to do?"

Zhang Haoer grimaced gently and said with a smile, "Silly thing, some matters you don't need to be taught how to, do you also want me to just let you go to the bridal chamber?" She walked away while laughing as the laughter sound receded from afar.

With the open door, the wind blew on the wet clothes and cooled it.

Tian SiSi thought deeply and pulled up her clothes. Suddenly a bundle of paper fell from her bosom, but she simply had not paid any attention.

“Some matters you do not need others to teach you.”
Tian SiSi only sensed her own face flushed, nipping her lips, she slowly walked upstairs.

Six

The ground floor of the pavilion was quiet without anyone.

That cute servant girl Xiao Qing lowered her head and prepared to tidy up the room.

She saw the bundle of paper, and her complexion changed suddenly, she immediately picked it up.

She saw that this bundle was still untouched.

She pouted her mouth, stamped her feet gently and prepared to rush upstairs.

At this moment, there was a cry of alarm upstairs.
Mr. Ge who was under the bed had disappeared.

Tian SiSi had nearly forgotten about him, when she saw Qin Ge, she seemed to have forgotten everything else.

But when she sat on the bed, she jumped up as if she had seen a ghost.

A ghost whom you never knew when he would come, when he would leave. If he had tied you down, you would never have peace in your life anymore.

Tian SiSi looked like she had met a ghost.
Mr. Ge was indeed even more fearful than a ghost.

When Zhang Haoer came, she was still trembling, she grasped Zhang Haoer with shaken voice said, “That person disappeared.”

Zhang Haoer patted her lightly, said with a supple voice, “If he disappeared, you have not need to be afraid, with me here, you don’t have anything to fear.”

Tian Sisi said, "But I know that he may come again, since he knows that I am here. He will not let off me easily."

Zhang Haoer said, "Actually who is he? Why does he entangle you like this?"

Tian SiSi burst into tears and said, "I do not know why he entangles me? I have not offended him... I don't have any relationship with him."

Zhang Haoer said, "But you are very afraid of him."

Tian SiSi with a trembling voice, "Indeed I fear him, he is simply not a person"

Then someone said, "Whether he is a person or a ghost, you do not need to fear him. If he dares to come again, I will make sure he will not return again."

Qin Ge had come.

His voice was gentle and calm, not only filled with self-confident, but it might give others confidence too.

Zhang Haoer sneeringly said, "He should not be able to return originally. If I had been the one sealing his accupoint he still would not have been able to move."

Qin Ge smiled lightly and said, "Indeed you must blame me for sealing him too lightly, because I did not know at that time who he was."

Zhang Haoer said, "A person entering someone's bedroom, making a hole in the curtain, what good person would do that?"

Qin Ge, "But I"

Zhang Haoer simply had not let him speak, also said, "No matter what you say, you have to bear responsibility, in the case of my younger sister here, I will hold you responsible."

Qin Ge sighed, with a forced smile he muttered, "It looks like I will need to train myself not to meddle in other people's business."

Zhang Haoer said, "But you are already in the middle of it, therefore, take charge of it."

Qin Ge, "How do you want me to take charge?"

Zhang Haoer said, "You should know."

Qin Ge hesitatingly said, "You want me to protect Miss Tian here?"

Zhang Haoer's showed a sweet smile and said, "You have finally become intelligent."

Tian SiSi hid in Zhang Haoer's bosom, but she could not help but smile.

She also thought originally Zhang Haoer was not being reasonable, but only now she understood what she was trying to do.

She did that to arrange so they could be close to each other.

Zhang Haoer also said, "Not only I want you to protect her, but also day and night I want you to protect her, continuously up until you catch that person."

Qin Ge, "What if that person never shows up?"

Zhang Haoer's eyes blinked and said, "Then you protect her for her whole life."

This sentence was really not disguised, even a stupid person would know what she really meant.

Tian SiSi had blushed, Qin Ge seemed to have blushed a little too.

But he had not rejected the proposal, nor did he show any objection.

Tian SiSi liked it and yet felt embarrassed. She just hid herself in Zhang Haoer's bosom and did not come out.

Zhang Haoer must actually pushed her away, wiping her tear stains lightly and said with a smile: "Now you finally should feel relieved, with this person to protect you, you should not fear anyone anymoreYou do not want to smile?"

Tian SiSi smiled with embarrassment. Although she was embarrassed, she could not help smiling.

Zhang Haoer clapped her hands, "She smiled, she really smiled!"

Tian SiSi twisted her arm quietly and said quietly, "Die with shame."

Zhang Haoer had turned around suddenly and said, "You both chat here, I must say good bye now."

While speaking, she immediately walked towards outside.

Tian SiSi hurriedly hold on to her, said with worry, "You really must go?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Since someone doesn't like me here, what else can I do?"

Tian SiSi anxiously blushed and said, "YouYou cannot go."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Why can't I go? He can protect you for your whole life, if I have this ability, I will not go ask him."

She released Tian SiSi's hand suddenly, like a wisp of smoke she ran downstairs.

Tian SiSi stood silly.

She stood for a moment, then sat down, it was as if she did not know where she should put her hands, only felt her own heart "puff thump puff thump" jumping around.

Qin Ge seemed to smile at her.

She did not dare to look actually, but closing her eyes would not work, opening her eyes she did not know where to look, so she could only lowered her head and look at her own clasped hands.

Qin Ge seemed to look at her hands.

She wanted to hide her hands, but moving them right did not help, nor moving them left. She just wished her hands would disappear.

But of course, they would not.

Qin Ge's hands had extended and gripped her hands gently.

Tian SiSi's heart beat fiercely, it seemed to beat out of her chest, her blood had rushed around quickly, she just felt that Qin Ge seemed to whisper something in her ears, the voice was gentle and also pleasant to hear.

Actually what he said, she simply had not listened clearly, not even a word.

Qin Ge seemed to sing, not speak.

The singing voice was so remote, as if when a child was listening in her dream.

She was confused with her infatuation, as if she were drunk.

After a long time, she noticed that Qin Ge's hands had embraced her waist gently.

Her body seemed to be inside Qin Ge's bosom, she already felt his scalding hot breath.

His breath had also become more rapid, his mouth was saying ambiguous words.

Tian SiSi could not hear clearly what he said, she only felt his hands hugging her more tightly ...

He seemed to simply have three hands around her.

Tian SiSi's body started to tremble, she wanted to shove him away, but she did not have any strength, as if her mind were mounting the clouds and riding the mist.

She felt her body being embraced by Qin Ge, and being led to the bed.

She did not understand what was going on, only this situation was not very wonderful.

But wasn't this what she precisely wanted in her dreams?

"But this doesn't feel right.."

Actually where it didn't feel right, she was not sure too.

She felt she ought to shove him away, to reject him.

But she did not seem to have enough time to refuse him.

It was as if time had stopped and Qin Ge was still standing in his place.

But she did not know how, she suddenly found herself already on the bed.

The bed was very soft.

Warm and soft, people lying on the bed just felt like lying on the bundle of clothes.

She simply did not have the strength nor the time to reject him.

The matter between a man and a woman was often strange and unpredictable, sometimes very subtle, the time for rejection usually should come early because otherwise the opportunity to reject probably would not exist.

Because you had already raised the courage and the confidence of the opposite party.

When you wanted to reject, it would just be set aside.

Qin Ge's voice was sweeter, gentler.

Only at this kind of time, a man's voice could become so gentle.

He could do it at this kind of time because he knew that the opposite party had gradually lost the will to reject him.

This was also the man's happiest moment, but a woman's most tense time.

Tian SiSi was so anxious that her whole body had stiffened entirely.

At this moment, someone suddenly knocked on the door outside.

Xiao Qing was heard saying from outside, "Miss Tian, Master Qin, please eat the dessert. I just prepared the bird's nest soup."

Qin Ge jumped up quickly, ran over to the door, pulled it open and said loudly, "Who will eat dessert at this time, just go! Go quickly! Go as far as you can!"

His voice was anxiously ominous, far from being gentle.

Xiao Qing pouted her mouth and went downstairs resentfully.

Qin Ge wanted to close the door, who knew that at that time he was pushed out by someone.

Tian SiSi had expended her whole body strength, and finally managed to get out of bed and pushed him out.

“Thud”, the door closed.

Tian SiSi leaned with her whole body on the door, gasping for breath, her clothes had been all soaked through.

Qin Ge was very startled, he made the effort to knock on a door and said, “What are you doing? Why did you push me out? Open the door quickly.”

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and paid no attention to him.

Qin Ge stood on the door, after banging on the door for a while, he left muttering, “Strange, what is her problem?”

This was originally her dream, her hope. Her dream only lacked the real person, but now that the actual person was already by her side, no longer missing, instead she had pushed him away.

Hearing Qin Ge going downstairs, although she felt more relaxed, but her heart became empty, as if she had lost something.

“This time he goes away, maybe he will not come back again.”

Although Tian SiSi felt pale, her eyes was actually very red, wishing she simply could just bawl out her heart.

But at this moment, the sounds of footsteps had resounded in the staircase.

“Is it possible that he comes back?”

Tian SiSi's heart started "puff thump puff thump" beating loudly. Although she leaned heavily on the door, she anticipated that he might kick the door open.

Actually she did not really know what she was thinking.

"Open the door quickly, it is I."

This was Zhang Haoer's voice.

Although Tian SiSi relaxed, she seemed to be a little disappointed.

The door opened.

Zhang Haoer strode in angrily, sat on the chair with a greenish face, stared at her and then said loudly, "Actually what is the matter with you? You've got a problem?"

Tian SiSi shook her head, nodded, sat down, and then stood up again.

Seeing her absentminded appearance, Zhang Haoer's anger died down, she sighed, "I have created this opportunity for you only with great difficulty, how can you just kick him out?"

Tian SiSi's face became red, she lowered her head and said, "II am afraid."

Zhang Haoer said, "Afraid? What is to be afraid of? He will not eat you."

With a "pfui" laughter, she said simply, "You are no longer a child, what are you afraid of? Everyone will pass through this stage, unless you do not want to marry anyone for the rest of your life."

Tian SiSi was nipping at her lips and said, "But he looked so ferocious and flustered, how would anyone not feel afraid?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "Oh you should not be afraid then, he must have only been too anxious."

She walked forward and caressed Tian SiSi's hair lightly, "This is not unique, actually you are already a woman, you are old enough to know that the more a man get anxious, the more he likes you."

Tian Sisi said, "If he really likes me, then he should respect me."

Zhang Haoer laughed again "pfui" and said, "Silly thing, how can you say that he does not respect you? If he is doing it in front of a big crowd of people, then he has no right. But if it is in the room with only the two of you, that is just fine."

She blinked and said quietly, "Later you should know that if you can be compatible with him in this matter, he will also listen to you completely in other matters. If a woman wants the man to be obedient, time and time again, this is the only way."

Tian SiSi's face reddened, she never heard this kind of talk before, she simply did not want to think about it.

Zhang Haoer said, "Now I need to ask you one thing, actually are you interested in him?"

Tian SiSi's spoke haltingly, "How about him?"

Zhang Haoer said, "You don't have to worry about him, I only ask you, are you?"

Tian SiSi lifted up her courage, blushing she said, "If I want him, so what?"

Zhang Haoer said, "If you do, I will take over the responsibility, I will arrange to get you married tonight."

Tian SiSi was scared and said, "So quick?"

Zhang Haoer said, "He will have to return to Chiangnan tomorrow, if you want to go back with him, you should marry him quickly. If two people are already bound, walking together will be just fine."

Tian Sisi said, "But.....But I have to think slowly."

Zhang Haoer said, "What else do you need to think? He is a hero, you are a heroine, you should be happy together. If you wait too long, I am afraid the boiled duck will escape."

Then she sternly said, "This is your chance in a lifetime, if you don't grasp it, you will not find such a man again, just forget this idea once and for all."

Tian Sisi said, "ButBut you cannot force me like this."

Zhang Haoer sighed and said, "Now you are saying that I am forcing you. When everyone else is calling you 'Madame Qin', then you will feel grateful. You should know that it is not easy to be called 'Madame Qin'. Many girls attempted this before and did not succeed."

Tian SiSi closed her eyes.

She was seeing herself running away with Qin Ge to Chiangnan, and a big group of people cheering for them in front of their horses.

"Madame Qin is really beautiful, she must have been destined to be married to Hero Qin and become a happy couple, only such a beautiful woman can match such a hero like Hero Qin."

Naturally there was also a big-headed person, hiding in the crowd, looking at her secretly with secret longing of jealousy and envy in his eyes.

She would smile at that time and say to him, "You said that I could not marry anyone? Now you know that you are wrong."

She even seemed to see this big-headed ghost crying out his regrets.

She heard Zhang Haoer saying easily, "I am just an observer, but you need to decide quickly, otherwise I am afraid this 'Madame Qin' title will be robbed by someone else."

Tian SiSi suddenly said loudly, "Only I can become Madame Qin, anyone else should just give up!"

Seven

The bridal clothes were red.

Tian SiSi's face was redder.

She saw her face in the mirror and could not help praising herself.

Zhang Haoer was on her side, like a happy mother who dressed her up and applied the makeup.

After that Lady Tian's face indeed looked more tender and more beautiful.

Zhang Haoer sighed and muttered, "Really this is an inborn natural beauty, Qin Ge does not realize how lucky he is."

She smiled as she also said, "But he is also the one who matches you, if Uncle Tian knew that he had such a good son-in-law, he also would certainly feel very satisfied."

Tian SiSi's heart became really sweet.

This was something she had longed for even in her dreams, now the wish was to be fulfilled, how would she not feel happy?

“It is only a pity that Tian Xin is not here, she certainly would not be able to pout her mouth if she were here.”

Thinking of Tian Xin, she could not help thinking about Xiao Lan.

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, “Where is your servant girl Xiao Qing?”

Zhang Haoer said, “I have not seen her for quite a while, I do not know where she has gone to.”

Tian Sisi said, “Before I also have a servant girl, called Tian Xin, she looked extremely like her.”

Zhang Haoer said, “Oh? They really look alike?”

Tian SiSi said with a smile, “You might not believe me but these two people seemed to have come from the same mold.”

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, “Such being the case, I will give her as your dowry.”

Tian SiSi sighed and said, “It is only a pity that my servant girl Tian Xin is not here.”

Zhang Haoer said, “Where is she?”

Tian SiSi said low-spiritedly, “Who knew. Since that day at Madam Wang’s house, we got separated, I did not even say goodbye. I hope she did not meet with any accident, and that would already be a good thing.”

Zhang Haoer blinked and said with a smile, "Since Tian Xin is not here, I shall find Xiao Qing to accompany you."

She suddenly turned around and went downstairs.

As soon as she went out the door her complexion darkened, she walked in a hurry to the opposite flowering shrubs.

Between the flowering shrubs a shadow lurked unexpectedly, completely hidden and motionless.

Zhang Haoer walked closer and said suddenly, "Xiao Qing?"

This person said, "I have asked someone to take care of her."

Zhang Haoer lowered her voice, "You had better cope with her yourself, don't even let her see Tian SiSi or let them speak to each other."

The person laughed and said, "If you do not want her to speak, I will make sure she cannot speak forever."

Although the happy mother was not old, she seemed to have a great deal of experience.

They put on Tian SiSi's make up very quickly, and had exchanged her into the bridal clothes.

Although the powder might transform a young woman into a beautiful one, but regardless of how precious was the powder, it still would not compare to the shy, happy smile on her face.

Therefore there was certainly no ugly new bride in the world, moreover Tian SiSi was originally very attractive.

Happy laughter sounds were heard in that meeting room, mixed with the thumping noises to brighten the mood, the

clinking noises of the glasses, all of these brought out the festive feeling.

Although this marriage celebration was set up hurriedly, but many guests had come to drink and celebrate.

It looked like Zhang Haoer indeed had a wide net of friends.

The room provided anything, except tea.

Because the new bride could not drink before bowing to Heaven and Earth, with a full phoenix coronet over the new bride, if she suddenly needed to go to the bathroom, that would really be a joke.

Zhang Haoer certainly did not want this marriage celebration to turn into a joke.

Therefore not only she had arranged everything very well, moreover she expected thorough result as well.

Therefore everything went very smoothly, without the slightest mistake.

But for some unknown reason, Tian SiSi felt something not right inside her.

But which part was not right? She did not know.

She wanted to marry Qin Ge wholeheartedly, now finally this had happened according to her wishes.

Qin Ge was outstandingly talented and elegant, moreover he was very gentle to her.

“If a girl can marry this kind of man, why should she not feel satisfied?”

After they returned to Chiangnan, certainly many joyous events will await them.

They were also young, might as well travel around happily, enjoying life.

All were too content, too ideal, but where did it feel not right?

“Perhaps each young girl before becoming a woman feel a little restless in her heart.”

Tian SiSi sighed lightly, she was determined not to think of these unpleasant matters anymore.

“If father knew that I am marrying Qin Ge, he would certainly feel very happy, certainly he would not blame me.”

“Qin Ge was at least much better than that big-headed ghost.”

Thinking about that big-headed ghost, Tian SiSi’s heart seemed to quiver.

“In any event, at least I ought to ask him to drink and celebrate, if he knew I have gotten married today, he must be very happy.”

But Tian SiSi also knew later she might not see him again.

She suddenly remembered that big-headed ghost a little fondly.....

What was a girl thinking of in her heart before she got married?

To the man, it would be a secret that lasted forever, a secret that no one could guess.

Eight

Although the firecracker sound was not delightful, but it always symbolized a happy occasion.

The firecracker sound marked the time for the couple to bow to Heaven and Earth.

“Immediately bow to heaven and earth

The happy official's voice was so loud.

The happy women held Tian SiSi, hinted gently with the elbow to prompt her to do obeisance,

Tian SiSi knew that once she did the obeisance, she would be no longer “Lady Tian”.

After that, Lady Tian would become Madame Qin.

The happy women seemed to be a little worry, they said gently in her ear, “Do the obeisance quickly.”

Tian SiSi only heard their voice, she could not see the persons.

With the big red bridal veil, she could not see anything.

“A marriage is a frank and upright matter, why can’t the new bride see the groom?”

Tian SiSi suddenly felt a bewildering fear.

She had suddenly remembered that day at the countryside, and had thought of the possibility that the person wearing the scarlet gown beside her, was actually Mr. Ge.

“The new bride is you!”

But who is the bridegroom? Could he be Mr. Ge?

Tian SiSi only felt her nose itched, cold sweat started pouring down.

“Why doesn't the new bride do obeisance?”

The wedding guests had already started to grumble secretly, some even begun to get worried.

The happy women were more anxious, they felt they probably should push Tian SiSi downward.

Tian SiSi’s body hardened, suddenly she loudly said, “Wait a moment.”

The new bride unexpectedly had opened her mouth to speak.

The guests were startled and smiled, the happy women were frightened with ghastly pale looks.

They have served 20-30 years as happy mothers, but they had never heard the new bride called out to wait a moment.

Zhang Haoer luckily had caught up with her and said quietly, "It is the time now, why do you have to wait?"

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "I must have a look at him."

Zhang Haoer said, "Who?"

Tian Sisi said, "Him."

Zhang Haoer finally understood who she meant by "him", while anxious and angry, she could not help smile and say, "Do not be anxious now, when you are in the nuptial chamber, you will be able to look at him forever."

END OF CHAPTER 11

Chapter 12: Not a Good Deed

One

Tian Sisi said, "I must see him now."

Zhang Haoer anxiously had stamped her foot and said, "Why do you have to look at him now?"

Tian Sisi said, "IIf I cannot see whom I am marrying, I will not marry him."

She did not seem to know exactly what she was saying.

Zhang Haoer felt real anger but also funny and said, "Are you afraid of marrying the wrong person?"

Tian Sisi said, "Mmm."

Zhang Haoer finally could not bear it, stamping her feet she sighed, "Since the new bride must look at the bridegroom, why can't she do that?"

The new bride must look at the bridegroom, that seemed to be perfectly reasonable.

Everybody had all smiled.

Hearing this kind of matter everyone would smile.

Tian SiSi at present suddenly decided quickly, she finally raised her red coronet.

The bridegroom standing opposite her, although his eyes was shining with amazement, but the handsome face was very gentle and sympathetic.

No mistake, the bridegroom was Qin Ge.

Tian SiSi sighed, with a very red face, she thought the her morbid suspicious mind was too big.

Zhang Haoer squinting at her gave a faint smile, and at last said, "You have seen enough?"

Tian SiSi blushed and dangled her head.

Zhang Haoer said, "Now you can do the obeisance."

Tian SiSi's face became redder, her head hung low.

The red coronet came down from above, and covered her head again.

The sound of firecracker resounded again outside.

The happy official cleared his throat and called loudly.

"Immediately bow to heaven and earth"

Tian SiSi finally must do obeisance.

If she had really done the obeisance, then a great mistake must have occurred.

It was only a pity that she did not know what went wrong.

Who knew what went wrong?

Two

When a man or a woman got married, they became great.

The celebration of a man taking a wife and a woman taking a husband was definitely a good deed.

So why wasn't this marriage celebration a good deed?

A red congratulatory banner hung at the front of the hall, a pair of big scarlet wedding candle was burning brightly.

The candle fire reflected Zhang Haoer's face.

Her red face was as attractive as a new bride.

Seeing the couple finally wanted to bow to Heaven and Earth, she finally relaxed.

At this moment, someone suddenly quickly rushed out of the corner door, and like a swallow swooped in among the bride and the bridegroom. Holding the tea tray unexpectedly, she offered with a sweet smile, "Young lady, please have tea."

At this time, someone was actually offering the bride something to drink, no one knew whether to laugh or cry.

But this voice was actually extremely familiar, Tian SiSi could not stop herself from raising her veil and saw a smiling girl with big eyes and small mouth.

Tian SiSi could not distinguished clearly whether this girl was Tian Xin or Xiao Lan?

Zhang Haoer's complexion became very ugly, a pair of charming, enchanting eyes were now staring at this girl like a dagger, wishing to kick her out, dead or alive.

But on this kind of great happiness day, full of congratulating guests, one certainly could not kick out a person.

Therefore Zhang Haoer only could clenched her teeth and said bitterly, "Who asks you to come? Get out!"

This girl grinningly shook her head actually and said, "I cannot go."

Zhang Haoer angrily said, "Why?"

The girl said, "Because Master Qin told me to be here."

Zhang Haoer said, "Master Qin? Which Master Qin?"

The girl said, "I do not know him, I only know he is surnamed Qin, called Qin Ge."

Zhang Haoer's complexion had changed, with a stern voice she said, "You must be insane, Qin Ge is obviously here."

The girl said, "I am not insane, indeed there is another Master Qin, not this one."

The bridegroom's complexion had also changed, he interrupted, "Where is that person?"

This girl had not spoken when someone said with a laughter, "Here."

In the laughter, the red wedding candle seemed to diminish like it would be extinguished.

By the time the candlelight shone again, someone was standing in front of the candle.

A very big person, with a pair of long slit eyes.
Yang Fan.

Tian SiSi almost called out.

She really could not think how this big-headed ghost could find her, could not think he also would come here to make a disturbance.

When Zhang Haoer saw him, she looked concerned and not as ominous as a moment ago, she reluctantly smiled unexpectedly and said, "Is it you? Why do you have to destroy other people's good deed?"

Yang Fan said lightly with a smile, "Because this is not a good deed."

The bridegroom Qin Ge face reddened, he interrupted, "Who said this is not a good deed?"

Yang Fan said, "I said so."

Qin Ge, "What thing are you?"

Yang Fan said, "I and you are not the same."

Tian SiSi wanted to say something, but stopped, because she did not expect that this big-headed ghost unexpectedly dare to be so impolite to Qin Ge.

What was even stranger, she had not become angry, instead she felt this was very interesting.

Qin Ge was angry actually and said, "You know who I am?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

Qin Ge said loudly, "I am Qin Ge."

Yang Fan said, "That feels strange."

Qin Ge, "What was strange?"

Yang Fan said, "Because I am also Qin Ge."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile reluctantly, "You are playing a joke, just sit quickly and drink the happy celebration, I will accompany you."

Yang Fan raised his voice, "Who says I am cracking a joke, since he can be called Qin Ge, why can't I be called Qin Ge?"

He asked that girl suddenly and said, "Who are you called?"

The girl said with a smile, "Qin Ge."

Yang Fan said, "Right, if this person can be called Qin Ge, everybody can be called Qin Ge."

Qin Ge's face was very red, Zhang Haoer's face was pale, the two people had exchanged a meaningful glance secretly.

Suddenly, a light smoke spouted from Qin Ge's sleeves, spurting on Yang Fan's face.

The girl had pinched her nose and withdrew 7-8 feet back.

Yang Fan had not moved actually. Like he did not have any feeling, and blew gently forward.

That smoke suddenly changed direction, and instead had blown to Qin Ge's face.

Qin Ge started to sneeze suddenly, sneezed 5-6 times one after another, the tears and nasal mucus had flowed down immediately.

Then he softly dropped down, like turning into sand.

Yang Fan smiled to the girl and said, "Do you know what thing this is?"

The girl said, "Sleeping powder."

Yang Fan said, "Do you know what kind of person would bring sleeping powder with him?"

The girl bitterly said, "Only sexual predators and petty thieves use sleeping powder."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "You are unexpectedly very sensible."

The girl said, "But, Qin Ge cannot be a sexual predator or a petty thief."

Yang Fan said, "Indeed he is not."

The girl's eyes blinked and said, "Then this person certainly cannot be Qin Ge."

Yang Fan said, "The one who says that he is Qin Ge must be a stupid dog."

The girl said, "Who is he if not Qin Ge?"

Yang Fan said, "A sexual predator and a petty thief."

The girl said, "There are many petty thieves."

Yang Fan said, "He is the most obscene petty thief, he uses number nine sleeping powder which can only put himself to sleep."

The girl said, "However low he is, he must at least have a name."

Yang Fan said, "The obscene person's name is also obscene."

The girl said, "What is he called?"

Yang Fan said, "His name is etched on the chest, do you want to have a look?"

The girl said, "Will it dirty my eyes?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Just take a quick look."
He had suddenly ripped open that very attractive bridegroom clothes and revealed this person's chest.
On this person's chest was tattooed a flower butterfly.

The girl said, "Is it possible that this person is called Hua HuDie (flower butterfly)?"

Yang Fan nodded and sighed, "Good, throughout the ages, a person called flower butterfly cannot be a good thing."

The girl sweetly said, "You unexpectedly know quite a lot more compared to me."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Because my head is bigger than you, naturally more things are contained inside."

Zhang Haoer was continuously listening at the side, her complexion grew paler the more she listened.

Tian SiSi was also continuously listening at the side, her face became more red the more she listened, suddenly she stepped forward and kicked the back of this Hua HuDie.

She hated him so much she could go crazy.

“Unexpectedly Lady Tian almost becomes a petty, rapier thief’s wife.”

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, stared at Zhang Haoer and said, “YouWhat enmity do you have with me? Why do you want to harm me?”

She was so mad that her tears started to fall.

Zhang Haoer with a forced smile said, “This is really unfair to you, but I was also deceived by this person.”

She also walked forward and unexpectedly kicked him, she said bitterly, “You cur, you bring harm and pain to me.”

Tian Sisi said, “YouYou really do not know?”

Zhang Haoer sighed and said, “Why should I deceive you? I also do not have any enmity with you.”

Yang Fan gave a long sigh suddenly and said, “I really admire you.”

Zhang Haoer was stunned and said, “What?”

Yang Fan said, “You really can act.”

The girl blinked and said, “She thinks she can deceive you too?”

Yang Fan smiled and said lightly, “She should know herself that she cannot deceive me.”

The girl said, “Is there anyone in the world that can deceive you?”

Yang Fan said, "Perhaps only a person can deceive me."

The girl said, "Who?"

Yang Fan said, "I myself."

There were many other people in the hall, all of them looked stunned.

They came for the celebration drink, but now the celebration drink was still inadequate, and they actually saw a good play instead.

Tian SiSi suddenly had slapped Zhang Haoer.

Zhang Haoer unexpectedly had not moved, the pale face that was hit immediately became red.

The girl clapped and said with a laugh, "Hit well, again hit heavily."

Yang Fan also said with a smile, "This kind of person's facial skin is also thicker than the city wall, you hit again heavily, she will not feel hurt."

The girl said, "Then, how should we treat her?"

Yang Fan said, "Nothing."

The girl frowned and said, "Nothing? Just let off her like this?"

Yang Fan said, "Mmm."

The girl said, "Isn't that letting her get away cheaply?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "This kind of person felt that she must deceive other people since they were born, if they aren't deceiving people, then that would be strange, therefore..."

The girl said, "Therefore?"

Yang Fan said, "Therefore when you run into this kind of person, you must put up your guard against her, protect yourself the best you can, otherwise you will get swindled and get what you deserve."

Tian SiSi jumped and said, "You are saying I am getting what I deserve?"

Yang Fan said, "Yes."

Tian SiSi was staring at him.

Yang Fan said, "Did she force you? Or did you come here willingly?"

Tian SiSi was so angry she could not say anything, yet she indeed could not deny it.

Zhang Haoer indeed had not forced her.

Yang Fan said lightly, "If a person is not too careful with what she is doing, it is better not to blame other people or to complain."

His voice was light and stable, slowly then said, "Regardless of what happened, everybody should learn how to blame himself first, then she can blame other people. Otherwise, she is just like a child who has not grown up."

Tian SiSi turned around and ran out suddenly.

Yang Fan looked at that girl once, the girl had ran out too.

Zhang Haoer was actually looking at Yang Fan, as she sighed gently finally and said, "So you knew already how it stands."

Yang Fan said, "I only know a little, not very clear."

Zhang Haoer said, "But enough."

Yang Fan said, "Yes. Enough."

Zhang Haoer sighed that, "How will you cope with me?"

Yang Fan said, "What do you suggest?"

Zhang Haoer dangled her head and said, "I am not the chief instigator."

Yang Fan said, "I know that you are not."

Zhang Haoer said, "Mr. Ge?"

Yang Fan said, "You should better handle your own problem, before worrying about other people's."

Zhang Haoer was nipping her lips and said, "If I promise you that I will never ever deceive other people, will you believe me?"

Yang Fan said, "I believe you."

Immediately Zhang Haoer revealed a smile and sweetly said, "You really are a good person, also really an odd person."

Actually Yang Fan was not odd, or weird.

He was just a very ordinary person.

But the main difference was that not only he believed in other people, he also believed in himself.

He always liked to work with his own method, but that was also a very ordinary method.

Fair, but actually not very stern.

He would not use any excessive violence, but he also would not allow people to take advantage of him.

He liked to follow Confucianist's doctrine of being balanced and considerate, willing to open a big heart and generosity in facing the life.

Three

Cool night like fresh water.

Tian SiSi flushed to the courtyard, under a tree, when the tears had suddenly dropped.

This was tears of anger.

"The pig, the big-headed ghost I really met this alive big-headed ghost."

But if she had not met this big-headed ghost, wouldn't she have already become a sexual predator petty thief's wife by now?

"A person should better learn to blame himself first, then he can blame others."

When Tian SiSi became quite calm, she also had no alternative but to acknowledge that what he said had contained the truth.

A pair of hands suddenly extended before her, the hand was carrying the cup of tea.

"Young lady, please drink the tea to calm you down."

That girl had come, with a sweet and smart-alecky smile.

Tian SiSi could not bear to ask, "Actually are you Xiao Qing? Tian Xin?"

The girl winked and said with a smile, "Even if I turned into ash, the young lady can still recognize me!"

Tian SiSi's eyes shone and said, "You are Tian Xin."

Tian Xin smiled sweetly and said, “Who says that I am not Tian Xin, who says ...”

Tian SiSi had pinched her face and said, “The little rascal, now that you are familiar with that big-headed ghost, you have picked up his words, what more will happen?”

Tian Xin said with a smile, “Seriously, at the most I will help young lady to make a bed for him.”

“If she stays with the young lady, once she is married, won’t she want need help with making a bed.”

Tian SiSi sunk her face and said bitterly, “You can rest assured that even if all the men in the world have died, I still could not marry him!”

She did not let Tian Xin say anything again and also asked, “You already knew that that Qin Ge was the fake one?”

Tian Xin nodded.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, “Dead servant girl, since you knew already, why didn’t you tell me earlier?”

END OF CHAPTER 12

Chapter 13: A Place That Men Like

One

Tian Xin sighed and said, "I did not have any opportunity."

Tian SiSi said, "When you first deliver those clothes to me, why didn't you say it?"

Tian Xin said, "I knew that Mr. Ge was in the room at that time, therefore when young lady asked me whether I was Tian Xin, I did not dare to acknowledge."

Hearing about "Mr. Ge", Tian SiSi could not help but shiver.

Tian Xin said, "Afterwards I intentionally sprinkled the tea in the young lady's clothes to put a bundle of paper inside the young lady's bosom, who knew that you had actually lost it."

Tian SiSi sighed, "What did I know about it at that time."

With a forced smile she also said, "Up until now, I still could not figure out why they wanted to harm me?"

Tian Xin pursed her lips and said with a smile, "Others did not really want to harm you, just as long as you marry someone."

Tian SiSi frowned, "Why do they want to hatch such a complicated plan, actually who is the chief instigator?"

Tian Xin said, "Mr. Ge."

Tian SiSi could not help shiver some more and said, "He was in cahoots with Zhang Haoer?"

Tian Xin said, "You still do not understand until now?"

Tian SiSi said, "His accupoints had not been sealed by that fake Qin Ge."

Tian Xin said, "That was certainly an intentional well-staged act in front of you to make you think that that Qin Ge was real."

She sighed and then said, "Actually even if there had been ten Hua HuDie, Mr. Ge would have been able to kill them all with just two fingers."

Tian SiSi also sighed, "That person is indeed very fearful."

Tian Xin said, "As far as I know, his wugong is a lot more fearful than anyone else we have seen."

She smiled suddenly and said, "But as soon as he saw Master Yang, he seemed to have become a mouse who has met a cat."

Tian SiSi sank her face and calmly said, "How do you know?"

Tian Xin said, "If not for Master Yang promptly rescuing me, now I am afraid I will not be able to see young lady."

Tian SiSi said, "That person was trying to kill you?"

Tian Xin nodded and said, "They had already discovered my relation with the young lady."

Tian SiSi said, "But, how can you arrive here?"

Tian Xin replied, "Madam Wang delivered me here, she had sold me to Zhang Haoer."

Tian SiSi said, "That day you have not run away?"

Tian Xin shook her head and sighed, “How could I run away from her clutch?”

Immediately Tian SiSi “pfui” smiled and said, “Madam Wang is not Buddha all-knowing, why couldn’t you escape? You are Sun Wukong, aren’t you the always all-resourceful person?”

Having said this, she continued to laugh.

Tian Xin pouted her mouth and said, “What matter has to be so funny?”

Tian SiSi reluctantly smiled and said, “Have you looked who that big-headed ghost looks like?”

Tian Xin was stunned as she said, “Who does he look like? Someone we know?”

Tian SiSi said, “You should know, because you all descended from heaven to earth, one is the marshal, one is the great sage.”

Tian Xin had finally understood, she laughed despite trying not to, “You are saying he looks like the pig (zhubajie)?”

Tian SiSi’s laughed, “Don’t you think so? If you don’t there is something wrong.”

Tian Xin actually shook her head and said, “I don’t see the similarities.”

Tian SiSi said, “He eats and also sleeps a lot, as soon as he saw an attractive woman, the eyes narrowed into a slit immediately, giving a lewd appearance, just like that pig who entered the high village.”

Tian Xin sighed and said, "But if it were not for this pig, the pilgrim monk Tang and Sun Wukong must have died."

Tian SiSi's face showed irritation and said, "Why do you always side with him?"

Tian Xin said, "Because I admire him."

Tian SiSi winked and suddenly said with a smile, "Such being the case, should I marry you to him?"

Tian Xin said, "Fine."

She showed all happy face without any angst.

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, "You agree?"

Tian Xin said, "Why not?"

Tian SiSi said, "But his head is three times bigger compared to anyone's, you see that?"

Tian Xin said, "Why should it be a bad thing? A person with a bigger head is certainly more intelligent compared to others."

Tian SiSi said, "His waist is also thicker than a bucket."

Tian Xin said, "But his heart is actually thinner than a needle, he is very meticulous and thorough in everything."

Tian SiSi said, "You do not think he looks like a peculiar clown?"

Tian Xin said, "As long as a man is intelligent and competent, looking like a clown is not a problem, moreover he is not ugly."

Tian SiSi retorted, "He is not ugly? What kind of person should be called ugly then?"

Tian Xin said, "In my opinion, that Hua HuDie looks worse than a clown, he did not have the spirit of a man."

She closed her eyes like in a dream, then said, "If you look carefully, his whole body was fine and very pleasing to the eyes, and when he smiles in particular he looks extremely enchanting."

Tian SiSi stared at her and said bitterly, "Good, since you like him so much, why don't you just marry him."

Tian Xin sighed and said, "Unfortunately he doesn't like me, the person he likes is"

She had not completed the sentence when someone interrupted, "The person I like is myself."

Yang Fan grinningly stood in front of her and while laughing, "Everyone likes himself the most, if he doesn't do that, he will be condemned by heaven and earth."

Tian Xin blushed, dangled her head, and did not dare to open her mouth again.

Yang Fan stifled a yawn and said, "We go now."

Tian SiSi stared at him and said, "Go? Just leave like this?"

Yang Fan said, "Why can't we just go?"

Tian SiSi said, "Zhang Haoer?"

Yang Fan said, "In her room."

Tian SiSi said, "Have you really let her go?"

Yang Fan said, "What do you want me to do? Kill her? Hit her butt 300 times?"

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, "YouYouYou should at least let me vent something!"

Yang Fan said, "What made you angry? Has she ever hit you?"

Tian SiSi said, "No."

Yang Fan said, "Scolded you?"

Tian SiSi said, "No."

Yang Fan said, "When you came here, what did she want you to do?"

Tian SiSi said, "She wanted me to take a bath, to change clothes, thenThen"

Yang Fan said, "Then she fed you, introduced you to that ugly man, right?"

Tian SiSi said, "Right, only"

Yang Fan said, "Only what? Must vent?"

Tian SiSi said, "Certainly."

Yang Fan said, "How do you want to vent? Also tell her to take a bath, change clothes, eat, and then introduce an attractive young fellow to her?"

Tian SiSi jumped, stamped the feet and said, "Are you actually helping me? Or helping her?"

Yang Fan smiled and said, "I am not on anyone's side, I just want someone to be reasonable."

Tian SiSi said, "You think I am not reasonable? What about her? Why does she want to deceive me? Why does she want me to marry that person?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Perhaps because you are too attractive, therefore some people want wholeheartedly to marry you. If you had looked like me, no one would have been willing to marry you then."

Tian SiSi was so angry she screamed, "Who says I am attractive, I am not attractive, can't you see that they are plotting something?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Since when you became so modest? So rare, so rare"

He stifled another yawn and said, "I have to go, you want to go with me or not, it is up to you."

Tian SiSi said loudly, "It is up to me, so why should you bother?"

Yang Fan however walked leisurely forward and said easily, "If you see Mr. Ge, there is really no need to be afraid, at the most he only wants to marry you, he will not eat you."

He had not completed his words, Tian SiSi had pursued him, breathing heavily she blurted out, "Mr. Ge is also here?"

Yang Fan replied, "How do I know whether he is here or not? Where he is has nothing to do with me."

Tian SiSi said, "You have just seen him?"

Yang Fan said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "Why don't you apprehend him?"

Yang Fan said, "You had also seen him very often, why didn't you apprehend him?"

Tian SiSi said, "Because I cannot apprehend him."

Yang Fan said, "Same with me."

Tian SiSi said, "You are also the same? Is your wugong also inferior to him?"

Yang Fan sighed and said, "I actually do not have such high skills, why do you consider me so high?"

Tian SiSi said, "Didn't he immediately run when he saw you?"

Yang Fan thoughtfully said, "Perhaps only because I am an honorable gentleman, the evil cannot vanquish good, you probably know it too."

Two

The night was quiet.

The star light illuminated the road, while the wind brought the fragrance of flowers.

Yang Fan walked in front, and then Tian SiSi followed.

Although this big-headed ghost was hateful, but he was nothing compared to Mr. Ge.

Tian Xin walked nearby, the big eyes always never stopped darting back and forth on them.

Tian SiSi said suddenly, "You ask him, actually where are we going."

Tian Xin blinked and said, "Why don't you ask him yourself?"

Tian SiSi gave her a malicious stare, but kept her mouth shut.

Tian Xin said suddenly, "Although Zhang Haoer did not tell the whole truth, but she had not deceived you over one matter."

Tian SiSi said, "What matter?"

Tian Xin said, "Qin Ge have indeed arrived here, I heard them talk about it several days ago."

Tian SiSi's eyes shone and said, "Did you hear where he is at?"

Tian Xin shook her head, Yang Fan suddenly had turned his head and said, "If he had truly arrived here, I know a place where we would find him for sure."

Tian SiSi gave a forced smile and said, "What place?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Where a single man would like to go, you should know too."

Three

What place did men like to go to?

Interesting places.

That place did not necessarily have to be a scenic place or a very majestic house, as long as it provided the liquor, good food, attractive women and fair gambling, nine out of ten men would like that.

Any single man would like this place.

This place did not have beautiful scenery, actually it did not have any at all.

This place was located on a city corner on a dead alley.

This house was also not majestic.

In fact, this house should have been torn down ten years ago, it seemed some casual wind could have blown it apart.

The double doors had peeling paint and shut tight, with some piled trash lying nearby.

Tian SiSi was walking to the door when the smell had permeated her nose, frowning she said, "Why do you bring me here?"

Yang Fan said, "Aren't you looking for Qin Ge?"

Tian SiSi said, "He would come to this kind of damned place?"

Yang Fan smiled, "He will certainly come, moreover he won't go from here so easily."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "You will gradually know why."

Tian SiSi suddenly stopped her footsteps and said, "This place also has a lota lot of people who are fond of philanthropist such as Zhang Haoer?"

Yang Fan shook his head and said, "People who come to this place is not looking for philanthropists."

Tian SiSi said, "Who then?"

Yang Fan said, "People who come to this place, they all like being the philanthropists themselves."

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "I do not understand what you are saying."

Yang Fan said, "I am saying that these people like to deliver their own money to provide relief for other people,

moreover they deliver it very quickly.”

Tian SiSi suddenly said, “Quickly?”

Yang Fan said, “If you want to deliver your own money, there is no other place where you can deliver it quicker compared to here.”

Tian SiSi suddenly said, “I understand now, this place must be a very big gambling establishment.”

Yang Fan said with a smile, “Good, you are quite intelligent.”

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth, calmly said, “Looking at this tattered house, the person who comes here must be small fries.”

Yang Fan said, “You don’t understand, a person who truly likes to gamble doesn’t care about anything else as long as the place provides the gambling, even if he were to bet in the sewer it would be no problem.”

Tian SiSi said, “Since they can bet anywhere, why do they have to come here?”

Yang Fan said, “Because this place is secret.”

Tian SiSi said, “Why does it have to be so secret?”

Yang Fan said, “There are many reasons.”

Tian SiSi said, “You name them.”

Yang Fan said, “Some people are afraid of their wives, so they do not dare to bet openly. Some people have specific positions, they cannot bet otherwise. Also there are questionable people who if they bet openly will cause people to suspect.”

He smiled, "But here, there is no problem to bet, no one is out here to catch you, no one will question where your money comes from."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "Because the master here is the golden beard (Jin the bearded person)."

Tian SiSi said, "Who is the golden beard?"

Yang Fan said, "He is a person who is untouchable."

Tian SiSi said, "Qin Ge does not have a wife to be afraid of, also does not have shameful reasons, why does he still come here to bet?"

Yang Fan said, "Because you can bet a lot in this place, which will satisfy a craving. A small fry won't be allowed in."

Tian SiSi cast a glance at him and said, "How about you?.....You cannot enter here?"

Yang Fan smiled, "If I cannot enter, why should I bring you here!"

Tian SiSi said, "I did not realize that not only you are a drunkard, but also a compulsive gambler."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "You should already know that."

Yang Fan had knocked on the door using the copper collar, the door opened.

A person's face extended from behind the door.

An ominous face who seemed to get angry every three minutes or so.

Not only this person's appearance was ominous, the voice was also very ominous, staring at Yang Fan he said, "What are you doing?"

Yang Fan said, "You do not know me?"

This person, "Who knows you?"

Yang Fan smiled and said, "The golden beard knows me."
He put something in the person's hand and said, "You show this to him, he will know who I am."

After giving him a malicious stare, he banged the door closed.

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "The golden beard really knows you?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "I am not a philanthropist, I cannot deceive you."

Tian SiSi said, "How do you know this kind of person?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Because I am a compulsive gambler, and also a drunkard."

END OF CHAPTER 13

Chapter 14: Qin Ge, Qin Ge

One

Tian SiSi cast a glance at him and asked suddenly, "Mr. Qin will come here?"

Yang Fan said, "How do I know?"

Tian SiSi said, "You certainly know. I think that you have already known him, and he has already known you."

Yang Fan sighed and muttered, "Why do women always have many strange ideas?"

The door opened suddenly.

That very ominous person suddenly turned into a very polite person and with a smile he bowed and said, "Please enter."

Near him there was a very magnificent husky fellow wearing a long robe, with heavy eyebrows, uneven face, and cleaned shaven. As soon as he saw Yang Fan, he loudly said with a smile, "Today which wind is blowing you here?"

Yang Fan said, "An evil influence."

The guy said with surprise, "Evil influence?"

Yang Fan sighed, "If not for an evil influence, how can I get here?"

The guy said with a smile, "You have not come here for several months to waste your money, aren't you afraid your money will become moldy?"

Two

Although the smoke-laden house was very big, people fully crammed the place everywhere.

All kinds of person, the majority looking very anxious, some were not looking so anxious, but that was just a façade, their undergarments were already drenched with cold sweat.

The only person who was not anxious was that guy in the robe who had welcomed Yang Fan.

Because he knew who the only winner in the house was. Himself.

He patted Yang Fan's shoulder and said with a smile, "You go and play, once you are no longer busy, I will accompany you to drink again."

Waiting for him to be gone, Tian SiSi sneered suddenly, "It looks like you are not really friendly with the golden beard."

Yang Fan said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "If you were his friend, he would certainly come out and greet you personally."

Yang Fan smiled and said, "Who do you think the person who welcomed us?"

Tian SiSi said, "He cannot be the golden beard."

Yang Fan said, "He is not the golden beard?"

Tian SiSi lost her voice, "What? He is the golden beard? He did not have any beard."

Yang Fan said, "The beard can be shaven."

Tian SiSi said, "Since he is the golden beard, why does he need to shave his beard?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Because he recently got married."

Tian SiSi said, "Why should it matter?"

Yang Fan said, "It matters, and it is actually the main reason."

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "Does his wife tell him to scrape off his beard?"

Yang Fan said, "You have finally become intelligent."

Tian SiSi also could not bear smiling and said, "I did not expect such a person like him can also fear his wife."

Yang Fan said, "Anyone can fear his wife, regardless of race or social class."

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "So a man who is afraid of his wife is a very fair occurrence."

Yang Fan also sighed and said, "Such fair occurrence indeed are luckily not that many."

Many kinds of people were gambling in different ways, using dice, the sign nine (pai-jiu), odds and evens, big and small All kinds that you would expect to find here.

A notice was pasted on the wall:

"Gambling limits: Highest 1000 taels, lowest 10 taels."

Tian SiSi looked all around for a while before sighing and said, "Qin Ge is not here."

Yang Fan said, "I guarantee you that he will certainly come here."

Tian SiSi said, "You are not deceiving me?"

Yang Fan said, "Why do I want to deceive you?"

Tian SiSi thought that indeed Yang Fan should not have any reason to deceive her, she also asked, "When will he come?"

Yang Fan said, "That is difficult to say, anyway we will just wait here until he comes in."

Tian SiSi said, "If this place closes up?"

Yang Fan said, "This place never closes."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "Because nobody knows when the gambling addiction will manifest, therefore in this place people can come in 24 hours as necessary."

Tian SiSi cast a glance at him and said with a smile, "Now your betting addiction can manifest suddenly?"

Yang Fan gave a forced smile and said, "Having arrived here, if that thinking doesn't cross my mind that is impossible."

Tian SiSi said suddenly, "You looked at the woman on that side."

There was nothing strange to find a woman in a gambling establishment, but that woman was really too young and too attractive.

She was playing the sign nine (pai-jiu), moreover she was the dealer.

She wore dresses that was very magnificent and expensive, but now her neck opening was wide open, the sleeves were all rolled up and had revealed the snow white milk-white bosom and a pair of tender white arm.

She was losing money fast.

She got “the turtle ten”, so she had to pay up all around.

Her pile of money in front of her quickly disappeared.

A person with a pockmarked face who stood beside her squinted at her with an evil-looking smile and said easily, “Young madam, I think you ought to let others be the dealer.”

This young madam’s face had reddened and said loudly, “Not good, I must get back my money.”

The big person with the pockmarked face said, “If you want to get back your money I am afraid you will have to wait till tomorrow, today the jewelry you are wearing has all been ransomed, our custom here is not to give credit to anyone.”

The young madam was nipping her lips, after some momentary indecision she said suddenly, “I have another thing to ransom.”

The big person with a pockmarked face said, “What thing?”

The young madam stuck out her chest and said, “Myself.”

The face of that big person with the pockmarked face had brightened visibly, the faint smile took a measuring look at her and said, “How much do you want to ransom?”

He kept staring at the open neck of her dress and said, “Is 3000 taels good enough?”

Immediately that young madam patted the table and said, "Good, bring out the money, I am ransomed to you."

Tian SiSi looked with straight eyes, she could not bear sighing and said, "Wonder where this young madam comes from, she is losing so miserably."

Someone besides her sneered and suddenly said, "Darn me if that woman is a young honorable madam, how would an honorable young madam come to this kind of place?"

This person had a long face, wearing all black, his attire was completely similar to the guard of the door, so he must also be working under the golden beard.

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "What type of person comes here then?"

This person, "A woman who bets in this place is either sold here, or someone's secondary wife."

He pointed out to that young madam and said, "She is the thirteenth wife of the Datong government office Wang BaiWan. Although she may appear well-mannered, as soon as she has lost her bets, immediately she would revert back to her original disposition."

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, "As soon as a man bets, doesn't he also revert back to his original disposition?"

This person smiled and said, "But it is a pity that even if the man wants to sell himself, he can't."

He walked away with a grin, before leaving he cast a glance back at Tian SiSi twice.

Tian SiSi became so mad that her face became pale when she retorted, "Why does a woman's luck seems to be worse than man's since she was born? A man can bet, why can't a woman bet?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Because a woman is not born as a man.."

Tian SiSi stared back at him, "What are you saying?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "This sentence is very simple, but it is a pity that some women in the world cannot understand this."

So, Yang Fan started to bet.

He bet on the pai-jiu.

Since the gambling limit was 10 taels, whether he lost or won, he kept betting only 10 taels, no more no less.

Although the people beside him did not say anything, their vision seemed to show their disdain at him.

Regardless of how others viewed him and judged him, Yang Fan did not care.

But Lady Tian actually could not bear it.

Since she sat near Yang Fan, when Yang Fan got disgraced, wasn't that also causing her to lose face?

She could not bear saying quietly, "Can you increase your bet?"

Yang Fan said, "Cannot."

Tian SiSi said, "Why can't you?"

Yang Fan smiled, "Because I do not want to lose too quickly, and also because I do not want to win other people's money."

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "What kind of compulsive gambler are you?"

Yang Fan said, "I did not say that I am a compulsive gambler, you are the one who said it."

Tian SiSi stared at him before she laughed and sweetly said, "You are a compulsive gambler, it is just that you are an eighth-class compulsive gambler."

Yang Fan had not spoken back, nor did he increase his gambling stake.

He won once or twice, but he did not lose that many either.

Tian SiSi sighed, "Looks like if you set a limited gambling stake, you will not be able to double it."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "That is right."

The room suddenly became noisy with cheering noises, "Hero Qin has comewhen Hero Qin comes, the mood will certainly lighten up..."

Hearing about Hero Qin coming, Tian SiSi knew that they were talking about Qin Ge.

Qin Ge had really come.

Tian SiSi felt her mouth become dry, the hands and feet felt cold, and she had difficulty breathing in and out.

Although she had widened her eyes, she still could not see clearly which one was Qin Ge.

She was really too anxious, so anxious that everything seemed a little blurry.

Luckily she finally saw a red silk handkerchief.

It was like a red sun which had just risen.

Qin Ge indeed was a favorite, people everywhere would cheer him on.

All the people in this room have nearly encircled him.

Tian SiSi could no longer see the red silk handkerchief, she became so anxious that she simply could only stamp her

own feet.

Yang Fan sat as stable as the rock of Gibraltar there, concentrating completely on his gambling stake.

10 taels, never changed.

Tian SiSi really wished to stuff the 10 taels inside his mouth.

“Such a great person like Qin Ge has come, and yet this pig has just ignored him, it seems that to him, Qin Ge cannot be compared with his 10 taels.”

Tian SiSi hated him until her teeth itched so instead she went to Tian Xin and asked, “Have you seen him?”

Tian Xin blinked and said, “Him? How do I know who do you mean as ‘him’?”

Tian SiSi stamped her feet and said, “Certainly Qin Ge, who else besides him?”

Tian Xin said with a smile, “I actually saw him, but

Tian SiSi did not wait for her to complete her sentence and just interrupted her, “Actually how does he look?”

Tian Xin said easily, “His look? Not any different than other people, two eyes and two legs.”

Tian SiSi was so anxious and angry that she wished she could stuff 10 taels inside her pouty mouth as well.

By now she had finally heard Qin Ge’s voice!

The voice was loud and strong, precisely like a man's voice!

“When you bet, you must bet happily, otherwise, just go home and hug your wife.”

Everybody laughed together.

“Right, Hero Qin is really a happy person.”

“Playing odd and even is the happiest, Hero Qin how about you becoming the dealer?”

Qin Ge’s voice was happy, “Good, becoming a dealer is fine, but I have one condition.”

“Hero Qin just say it.”

“I have no problem following the golden beard’s rule, however if I become the dealer, you must bet at least 100 taels, the more the better, that way I can become looser and happier.”

The crowd had finally dispersed.

Tian SiSi finally saw Qin Ge, finally saw the great person in her mind.

What she saw first was naturally that bright red silk handkerchief.

The same red color as her complexion now.

The red silk handkerchief hung loosely on his neck.

The neck was very thick, but since Qin Ge was so tall, she did not consider that as thick.

A great person might not necessarily look very handsome, but he would certainly have certain extraordinary style.

Qin Ge’s style was indeed not small, he pulled out his hand out of his pocket and a big thick bunch of paper money was thrown casually on the table.

“Bet, bet freely.”

Thereupon everybody made his bet, several put 100 taels, some 1000 taels.

It seemed that the people who came got their money easily, either from stealing or from snatching other people’s money.

Everybody cheered

The banker compensated many, but only swallowed a few.

After compensating several 1000 taels, instantly, the ten thousand taels no longer belonged to the surnamed Qin.

Qin Ge actually did not turn a hair, his eyes were still luminous, although he was not very handsome, but by his style, any woman would readily swoon and prostrate themselves under his black satin pants.

Tian SiSi simply looked at him in awe, she could not bear gently sighing and said, "He is really a man, really a big hero."

Tian Xin smiled suddenly and said, "How do you know?"

Tian SiSi said, "Just looking at how he gambles, that's enough."

Tian Xin said, "If a person loses money while making large bets, that doesn't prove he is a man or a hero." She smiled and said, "Perhaps it can only prove one thing."

Tian SiSi said, "What?"

Tian Xin said easily, "It can only prove that he is a compulsive gambler, a first-class compulsive gambler."

Tian SiSi was so mad she just ignored her.

Yang Fan? He was still concentrating completely on his gambling stake. 10 taels bets.

Tian SiSi could not help giving him a shove and said quietly, "Do you know Qin Ge?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, "You have mixed with many people in jiang-hu, and yet you don't know the great people."

Yang Fan smiled and said, "Because I was not born a great person, moreover as soon as I see a great person I become anxious."

Tian SiSi said bitterly that, "Why don't you think of a way to get to know him?"

Yang Fan said, "Why do I want to think of a way to get to know him?"

Tian SiSi said, "Because.....Because I want to get to know him."

Yang Fan said, "That is your matter, I have already said, I can only bring you here to find him, I am not doing anything else."

Tian SiSi said, "ButBut you should at least give me an opportunity."

Yang Fan said, "What kind of opportunity?"

Tian SiSi said, "If you go there to gamble, you might get to know him."

Yang Fan said, "I cannot go."

Tian SiSi said, "Why can't you go?"

Yang Fan said, "The gambling stake on that side is too high."

Tian SiSi stamped her feet and said, "Why don't you go home and hug your wife?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Because I do not have a wife."

His replies were always simple, nobody could say he did not tell the truth, but some might say that although he was still alive, his spirit had already died.

Tian SiSi walked closer towards Qin Ge and saw that big person with a pockmarked face.

Rotating her eyes, she asked suddenly, "Do you know that big person with a pockmarked face?"

Yang Fan smiled, "I do know him actually, but he is not a great person."

Tian SiSi said, "What does he do?"

Yang Fan said, "He is a bloodsucker in this gambling establishment."

Tian SiSi frowned, "Bloodsucker?"

Yang Fan said, "He specially waits for someone to lose his bets and then consider his possessions, he would offer money for further bets at very low nominal value. If the original value is 300 taels he would only offer 150."

Tian SiSi's eyes kept rotating, she suddenly smiled and said, "You are a good person, right. Just help me a little?"

Yang Fan said, "What little help?"

Tian SiSi said, "Ransom me with that man with a pockmarked face."

Yang Fan looked at her up and down twice and said, "You have a problem?"

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "No, no problem at all."

Yang Fan said, "You still want to ransom yourself to make large bets?"

Tian SiSi said, "No, I am not a compulsive gambler."

Yang Fan said, "So you are saying you don't have a problem, you are not a compulsive gambler, and yet you still want me to ransom you with that man?"

He sighed and gave a forced smile, "Why do women have strange ideas?"

Tian SiSi said, "You do not need to worry about me, as long as you help me over this, I will no longer make any trouble for you."

Yang Fan gave it a thought and finally said, "This is your last request?"

Tian SiSi said, "Absolutely last."

Yang Fan sighed, "Fine, the long pain is inferior to the short pain, I will accept this fate."

He finally beckoned to that big person with a pockmarked face and said loudly, "Zhao Gang, could you come here?"

That big person Zhao Gang looked at him, also looked at Tian SiSi beside him, however he finally walked leisurely with a faint smile and said easily, "What? Betting small, and yet you still lose everything?"

Yang Fan said, "Even betting a tael, sooner or later you can lose everything."

Zhao Gang said, "What do you want to ransom?"

Yang Fan referred to Tian SiSi and said, "How much can you give for her?"

Zhao Gang took a look around Tian SiSi several times, his face brightened and said, "How much do you want to ransom?"

Yang Fan said, "Such a young and attractive girl must at least worth 3000 taels."

Zhao Gang stared at Tian SiSi several times while muttering, "She actually looks like an original goods ... Fine, I will give you 3000 taels, as long as you can guarantee that she will not run away."

Yang Fan said, "Aren't you afraid other people will not pay their debts?"

Zhao Gang laughed and said, "The one who dares to cross me, I really must admire him."

He counted 3000 taels in paper money, but before handing it to Yang Fan...

Tian SiSi suddenly screamed, "Save me, save me!" Her call seemed to be more scared than a person twisting a chicken neck.

Yang Fan did not even blink, like he had expected this to occur.

Only Zhao Gang was scared, everyone else did not seem to hear anything.

The most exasperating thing, Qin Ge had not heard her either.

When a man gambled, besides the sound of the dice, very few could hear any other sound.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, flushed to Qin Ge's side and screamed, "Save me, save me."

She basically just screamed into Qin Ge's ears.

At last Qin Ge seemed to have heard her, but not that clearly, so he turned around with a frown and asked, "What's the matter?"

Tian SiSi was pointing at Yang Fan and said, "HeHeHe is trying to sell me to others."

Qin Ge sized her up several times and still frowning he asked, "How is he related to you?"

END OF CHAPTER 14

Chapter 15: True Qualities of a Big Hero

One

Tian SiSi lowered her head like she must cry very soon, saying, "He is not related to me at all, I was only coming here with him. He..."

Immediately Qin Ge struck the table and said, "What is this? Where is the law in this world?"

His strode in front of Yang Fan and stared at him, "Why do you have to sell this girl to others?"

Yang Fan sighed, "Because I am a compulsive gambler, moreover I have just lost big."

Saying this reason was like asking to be hit on the butt 300 times.

Who knew that suddenly Qin Ge seemed to sympathize with him very much and said, "That is no wonder with you. How much money do you have to get back?"

Yang Fan smiled suddenly and said, "Since Big Hero Qin had noticed me, I don't need even 10 taels,"

He stood up, patted his clothes and left the place.

Looking at him leaving, Tian SiSi felt a little uncomfortable in her heart.

"In any event, this big-headed ghost is not a dishonest person, I will certainly have to find an opportunity to repay him later."

Suddenly she had remembered Tian Xin.

"Since he has no wife yet and Tian Xin likes him, why don't I simply give tacit permission to yield her to him?"

It was only a pity that by now Tian Xin had disappeared again.

When did Tian Xin go, where did she go? Tian SiSi unexpectedly did not know.

A few moments ago, she had only seemed to notice that Yang Fan person, in her heart there was also only Yang Fan.

How was this matter?

Lady Tian did not know, and she did not even dare to acknowledge it.

She sighed gently, when she turned around, she found that Qin Ge had stood beside her with a faint smile looking at her.

She had gone through so much trouble to find him, and had finally gotten to know this great person with difficulty, and yet she seemed to have forgotten about him a moment ago.

This great person did not seem to be no longer as important in her heart as that pig?

Qin Gehuan was staring at her, as if waiting for her to speak. His eyes were certainly very bright, exhibiting great strength and yet his eyes were also somewhat red.

"It looks like a person with such great courage and great bearings will not be able to sleep a lot."

Tian SiSi finally smiled and said, "Many thanks to Big Hero for rescuing me, otherwise II really did not know what to do."

Qin Ge said, "You know me?"

Tian SiSi cast a glance at the red silk handkerchief on his neck and smiles, "Who in jiang-hu doesn't know Hero Qin?"

Qin Ge said, "You knew that I would rescue you?"

Tian SiSi said, "Hero Qin behaves righteously, also everybody in the jiang-hu knows that."

Qin Ge slowly said, "Because you knew that I would rescue you, therefore you arranged for that person to sell you to that Zhao Gang, right?"

Tian SiSi was stunned.

She did not expect Qin Ge to know her ruse so well that she was at lost for words.

"YouHow can you know?"

When she said this, she immediately regretted it, it was like admitting to Qin Ge that what she did just now was completely acting.

Qin Ge laughed and said, "Why shouldn't I know it? You think this is a wonderful method, but to me this is not a peculiar method because at least 7 or 8 girls have also tried a similar method to me."

Tian SiSi's face reddened from ear to ear, she really wished she could dig a tunnel to hide herself in.

Qin Ge also suddenly said, "But you actually differ from these other girls!"

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, raising enough courage she asked, "Howhow?"

Qin Ge was smiling and said, "You are much more attractive compared to these girls and you smile a lot sweeter than them. With such a sweet smile, my luck in the future cannot be too bad, therefore ..."

He pulled Tian SiSi with him and said, "Come on, accompany me to bet, with you looking on, you will really give me good luck."

Therefore Lady Tian had become to know Qin Ge, moreover she had begun to understand him.

She had discovered that Qin Ge was a person who dared to say what he said and dared to do what he did. When he held her hand, regardless of how many people were looking on, he would still dare to pull her hand.

If he spoke about something, regardless of how many ears were listening, he also dared to set his own rules. He did not worry about what other people thought, he just disregarded them completely.

“If it were that big-headed ghost, perhaps he would not have revealed my secret in front of so many people just to save my face.”

Lady Tian had decided earlier that she would no longer think about that big-headed ghost, but she did not know why, whenever she saw anyone, she could not help comparing that person to him.

“In any event, Qin Ge was at least more open minded compared to him.”

Lady Tian had finally drawn a conclusion for herself.

But was this conclusion correct?

She did not know — — well she knew, but she could not get herself to acknowledge it.

When Lady Tian was willing to acknowledge that she was making a mistake, the sun would have certainly set in the west.

Two

Intimate friends were not necessarily good friends.

For example, “wine” and “gambling” were very intimate, so intimate that very few people could separate them apart, and yet they were really friends who ruined each other.

Therefore a compulsive gambler was also usually a drunkard.

As soon as some people drank, he would want to bet; Some people who bet from the very beginning, would want to drink later.

And the result?

The result was, "The more you lose, the more you drink. And when you drink some more, the more you lose. And when you get really drunk, you have probably lost everything."

Therefore in a gambling establishment they always provided the liquor, moreover they would just give it for free, they would just let you drink as much as you want.

Because when you were so far into your drinking, that meant that you were so far into losing in your betting.

Qin Ge was very, very far in his drinking.

If you were not willing to acknowledge his heroic spirit before, when you saw him drink you would have no alternative but to acknowledge it.

The way he drank his liquor seemed to resemble how he viewed a hated enemy, as soon as the cup was filled with the wine, immediately the wine got deposited into his belly, no matter how many cups, no matter how big was the cup size.

"When a man drinks like this, that is truly a true quality of a hero."

But Tian Xin would have also said, "This also cannot prove that he is a hero, it just proves that he is a drunkard."

This pouty mouth really had not spoken that many good sayings.

"Where has this dead servant girl gone to? Could she have run away with that big-headed ghost?"

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, she decided to no longer think about anything else and just concentrated completely on Qin Ge.

Then she discovered immediately that Qin Ge had lost everything.

A person's appearance who had lost everything was usually not very attractive, but unexpectedly Qin Ge did not even turn a hair.

That golden beard suddenly appeared at his side. He showed a sympathetic face and said, "Hero Qin, your wind is not blowing great today and you have really lost a lot."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "I was prepared to lose money. As long as I can bet happily, losing 18000 taels is not a problem for me."

The golden beard raised his thumb and said loudly, "Good! That is the spirit of a real man, not only betting well, but also losing well."

He waved his hand to beckon his people and said, "Bring here 50,000 taels, we have to let Big Hero Qin regain his money."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "I knew from early on that you are also a good person, you don't even wait for me to open my mouth."

The golden beard suddenly seemed embarrassed and hesitatingly said, "Only our custom here, Hero Qin must know about it."

Qin Ge said, "You must have a ransom?"

The golden beard said with a smile, "A friend is a friend, but a custom is a custom, Hero Qin's heroic spirit soars like cloud, this institutional rule is really awkward for a friend."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "You have no need to beat around the bushes with me, when you pile up that money in front of me, I, surnamed Qin, will not take your money in vain."

He had patted his own chest and said, "You can look at my whole body, if you find something worthy of 50,000 taels, you just need to open your mouth and say it!"

The golden beard's face brightened and said, "Really?"

Qin Ge had shown a serious face and said, "What is real or false? When you open your mouth, I will let you see what I can do!"

The golden beard's eyes flashed, he lowered his voice suddenly, "Hero Qin, do you see the three people sitting in that corner?"

He had no need to point them out, others would also know.

Because these three people were indeed very distinct.

These three people were a taoist priest, a monk, and a poor scholar.

In the gambling establishment all sorts of people played there, even if some monks and taoist priests came here, that was not so strange.

What was strange was that these three people were not betting at all.

The monk held a string of buddha beads, his mouth was mumbling as if he were chanting.

The taoist priest closed his eyes one's eyes, both palms were clasped together, giving the impression that he was meditating here.

The poor scholar held a cup of wine on the left hand and a book on the right, as if he were looking at personal redemption with avarice.

The monk was chanting, the taoist priest was sitting in meditation, the scholar was reading they are all performing their mundane tasks, and yet performing these in a gambling establishment was really strange and not fitting the profile.

These three people were occupying a gambling table, other people who wanted to bet did not have enough room to sit there.

Tian SiSi saw that these three people were intentionally looking for trouble.

She felt that these three people were using not only an extraordinary method, but also an interesting one.

Qin Ge frowned, "You want me to drive them out?"

The golden beard said, "That is my intention."

Qin Ge said, "Why don't you do it?"

The golden beard sighed, with a forced smile he said, "Because they have not broken the rule here." He continued, "There is really no stipulation here that would prevent a scholar from reading, a taoist priest to meditate and a monk to chant, right?"

Tian SiSi almost laughed.

Although everyone knew that these three were intentionally looking for trouble, but no one could point out that they had made a mistake.

Qin Ge said, "When did they come?"

The golden beard said, "Several days ago. But sometimes they come, sometimes they leave, nobody knows when they will appear."

Qin Ge said, "Why did you allow them to come in?"

The golden beard also sighed and said, "The question here is that nobody knew how they managed to get in."

Qin Ge's eyes had shone as he lowered his voice, "So, these three people actually have some skills."

The golden beard said, "It looks like they are indeed a little prickly, therefore if Hero Qin is not willing to deal with this issue, please do not feel forced."

Qin Ge sneered, "I am a person who likes to make trouble since I was born."

The golden beard revealed a delighted smile, "Therefore, this 50,000 taels will be waiting for Hero Qin for you to regain your money."

Qin Ge laughed and tossed down the wine before he strode forward.

Qin Ge always did things very simply and straightforward.

But by becoming a bodyguard for this gambling establishment for 50,000 taels, wouldn't this caused him to lose his chivalrous person identity?

Tian SiSi continuously looked from his side, her heart unavoidably felt a little disappointed.

"But what should a chivalrous person do?"

"Behaves righteously, helps the weak , upholds justice, settles a disputeThese matters not only would not earn money, sometimes, they would require some additional money too.

"A chivalrous person is also a normal person, who must eat meal, must spend like any other people, maybe even

more than normal people, so if they just do things that require money, won't they starve to death in the end?"

END OF CHAPTER 15

Chapter 16: Unexpected Visitors

“A chivalrous person cannot live on a golden goose, nor does he have a place where silver pieces would rain everyday, so how do you want them to pull a cart with a nonexistent donkey? Then how do you lose face in this situation?”

Thinking it over, Tian SiSi felt he did nothing wrong doing this.

As long as Lady Tian thought about something, she always found a way to explain it.

As long as Lady Tian liked the person, she would always consider him a good person.

The taoist priest was still meditating, the monk was chanting the scripture and the scholar was deep in reading looking lost in his thought.

Qin Ge walked slowly.

He intentionally walked very slowly, very calmly, not because he had drunk five big catty of wine, that he could not walk steadily, but the way he walked he expected the other people to notice him.

He appreciated how others would look at him with meaningful glances that were three parts awe and seven parts envy.

This point he indeed did very successfully.

Everyone was paying attention to him so the sound in the hall suddenly quieted down, even the sound of the dices had all stopped.

Qin Ge's smile became freer and easier as he arrived slowly in front of that scholar and then he said easily, “What book are you reading?”

The scholar had not heard him.

In a jiang-hu person's mind, a scholar would equate to being poor and pedantic, and this scholar was not an exception. He wore a blue rough shirt that had become whitish from too many washings, his face was yellowish as if he did not had enough nutrition.

And now his face suddenly showed a delightful smile and he approved loudly, "Good Zi Fang, good Zhu Hai, although indescribably tragic but enough to startle the world.....Happy, happy, deliriously happy."

At the end of this speech, he had downed a cup of wine that he carried with him.

Qin Ge could not bear asking, "Who is this Zi Fang? Who is also Zhu Hai? Is it possible that they are the the martial arts world masters?"

The scholar finally turned to look at him, but his glance was like looking at an arriving camel, he did not seemed to be in awe at the very least.

He blinked at him and then frowned, "Zhang ZiFang is Zhang Liang, haven't you heard of him?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "I have not heard of him, I only know that the world number one in the martial arts world is Gentleman Lan, he is also my good friend."

He smiled unexpectedly as he said, "The next time I have the opportunity to see him, I might as well ask for his advice for a few kung-fu moves."

The scholar listened to what he said like a person being slapped, even his nose became crooked. He poured some more wine into his cup and drank some, before giving a sigh and muttered, "A stupid child cannot be taught, a rotten

wood cannot be carved, you better walk as far as you can, do not make me consider you as uncouth."

Qin Ge suddenly became very stern as he said, "You want me to leave?"

The scholar said, "That's what I want."

Qin Ge said, "You know what I want?"

The scholar said, "I am not a worm in your belly, how would I know what you want to do?"

Qin Ge said, "Right, I will tell you then, I want you to leave."

The scholar seemed to be very startled and said, "You want me to leave? Why?"

Qin Ge said, "You know what place is this?"

Scholar said, "A gambling establishment."

Qin Ge said, "Since you know, you should not have come."

Scholar said, "Even a prostitute can come here, why can't a scholar come here?"

Qin Ge said, "What are you doing here?"

The scholar said, "Certainly studying, if a scholar does not study then the whole body and thinking will become uncouth."

He was staring at Qin Ge said, "Can't a scholar study?"

Qin Ge said, "He can."

The scholar said, "Since a scholar can come here and can study, why do you want the scholar to leave, am I right?"

Qin Ge said, "Yes."

Scholar said, "Since I am right, then you should leave."

Qin Ge said, "I will not leave, you should leave!"

Scholar said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because I never reason with a scholar."

The scholar jumped suddenly and said, "You never reason with anyone?"

Qin Ge said, "Right."

The scholar has pulled up his sleeves and said, "You want to fight?"

Qin Ge had smiled and said, "You are finally right."

The scholar was staring him and said, "You do not reason with a scholar, then why does a scholar want to fight with you?"

He pulled down his sleeves again slowly and said, "I think you should leave quickly, if you do not leave, I will"

Qin Ge said, "What?"

The scholar said, "Leave. If you do not leave I will leave,Are you really not going to leave?"

Qin Ge said, "Really!"

The scholar said, "Fine, if you don't leave, I will leave."
He actually really meant what he said, and he left.

Qin Ge laughed as he finished the scholar's wine in the pot, then he stood in front of that taoist priest and said, "That scholar is also the taoist priest's friend?"

The taoist priest put his palms together, "The red flowers, the green leaves and the blue lotus root are like Confucianism, Buddhism, and Taoism, everything is in one harmony, so who is not a friend of mine?"

Qin Ge said, "Since the scholar can come here, a taoist priest certainly can also come."

The taoist priest said, "Precisely."

Qin Ge said, "Since a scholar can study here, the taoist priest certainly can also sit in meditation here."

The taoist priest said with a smile, "The benefactor is really a sensible person."

Qin Ge said, "I also understand one thing."

The taoist priest said, "Let me know about it."

Qin Ge said, "Since the scholar can leave this place, the taoist priest should also leave."

The taoist priest thought and said, "If the taoist priest can leave, the monk also should leave."

Qin Ge had also smiled and said, "The taoist priest is also a sensible person."

The taoist priest said, "I actually do not know whether this monk is a sensible person?"

The monk said, "No."

The taoist priest said, "Are you a muddled monk?"

The monk said, "If I do not enter hell, who will? If this monk is not muddled, who is?"

The taoist priest said, "If the monk really wants to enter hell, that is actually easy, hell is not that far from here."

The monk said softly with a smile, "Such being the case, I will let brother guide me."

The taoist priest also said softly with a smile, "In front of the master, how dare I be the one in front?"

The monk said, "Brother, please."

The taoist priest said, "Master, please."

The monk looked at Qin Ge and said, "This benefactor? Do you intend to go with this poor monk?"

The taoist priest put his palms together and said with a smile, "Master and myself should leave first, this benefactor will surely come after us quickly!"

The monk said, "Such being the case, this poor monk will wait in hell thenAmida Buddha."

The taoist priest said, "Immeasurable long-lived Buddha."

The monk said, "Virtuous, virtuous."

The two people put their palms together while their mouths proclaimed their chanting praise, after bowing to Qin Ge, they left while smiling.

When they got to the entrance, the monk suddenly turned his head to Qin Ge and said, "But the benefactor must not forget about today."

The taoist priest said, "He cannot forget."

The monk said, "How does the taoist priest know so much about another person?"

The taoist priest said softly with a smile, "The road to the hell is always easier to take."

The monk said softly with a smile, "Right, going down the road is much easier than coming up the road."

The taoist priest said, "Also much quicker."

At the same time the two people laughed three times and left without looking behind them.

Qin Ge also wanted to laugh, but he could not muster even a little smile.

Other people also could not really smile, because they were all a little disappointed.

Everyone thought that this monk, the taoist priest and the scholar all had their own intention therefore they would produce interesting interaction with Qin Ge. But instead, they had left obediently without any fight.

Some people were discussing secretly in a low voice, "Actually what are these three people doing?"

They certainly was not planning to be here just to chant the scripture or to sit in meditation.

"But if they were looking for trouble, why did they leave so obediently?"

Certainly because they saw the red silk handkerchief on Qin Ge's neck.

"If not for Hero Qin's great reputation engulfing them, how could they have been so honest?"

Qin Ge was really great.

"A person who tries to reason with a scholar is a simpleton and a person who tries to fight with Hero Qin

fight is not just a simpleton, he must be an idiot.”

Tian SiSi originally also felt a little lump in her heart, but as soon as she heard these words she suddenly became happy. When others commended Qin Ge, she was simply even happier than Qin Ge.

But what was strange was that Qin Ge did not look very happy. Suddenly Qin Ge laughed as if he just found something that was very funny, as if the wine in his belly started to function.

He laughed continuously as if he gradually lost his chivalrous person's appearance. Tian SiSi could not bear it anymore, and pulled his lower hem discreetly and said quietly, “Hey, others are all looking at you.”

Qin Ge nodded while laughing, while continuing to nod he said, “I know that others are all looking at me.”

Tian SiSi said, “Can you laugh a little more quietly?”

Qin Ge said, “No.”

Tian SiSi said, “Why?”

Qin Ge said, “Because I was thinking something that was extremely funny, therefore I must laugh.”

Tian SiSi said, “What is so funny?”

Qin Ge said, “The monk”

Tian SiSi said, “What about the monk?”

Qin Ge said, “He said he wanted to wait for me in hell.”

Tian SiSi said, “Why is it so funny?”

Qin Ge said, “Just because.”

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "He did not know that I was running away from hell." He lowered his voice and said mysteriously, " Do you know why I was running away from that place?"

Tian SiSi only shook her head.

Qin Ge said, "Because there is a monk there."

He had not finished his sentence, before he burst into another long laughter.

Tian SiSi looked at him and wondered a little, "Is this person really Qin Ge?"

She had made one mistake, she could not afford to make another.

But it was only a pity that she did not know the face of the real Qin Ge.

By now luckily the golden beard had stepped in, he was carrying the thick bundle of money, a thick wad of paper money.

The golden beard said with a smile, "Here is a small gift, I ask Big Hero Qin to accept."

Qin Ge said, "Fine."

He was indeed a very frank person, very impolite.

The golden beard said, "In addition, we also have something else to offer to Hero Qin."

Qin Ge said, "What else are you offering?"

The golden beard said, "An opportunity."

Qin Ge said, "What opportunity?"

The golden beard said, "An opportunity to let Hero Qin get back your money."

Qin Ge laughed, "Fine, I can only be happy like this."

The golden beard was also smiling, "But how does Hero Qin want to bet?"

Qin Ge said, "Any method of betting is fine."

The golden beard clapped his hands and said, "Good, any type of betting is fine, only the person who should win, will win."

He was smiling as he also said, "But a person who should lose, won't win regardless of the betting method."

Therefore Qin Ge lost again as he should lose anyway.

Because when a drunken master got drunk, even if he should win instead he would lose without anything remaining, moreover he would lose it very quickly.

"The opportunity to regain the money", should have been said as, "The opportunity to lose everything." Wherever was the gambling establishment, the kind of opportunity would always exist.

Everybody who watched this gave a sigh for him, whether it was genuine sympathy or not, a sigh was a sigh. "45 big" met "the leopard" did not happen very often. Some people were discussing secretly in a low voice, "I am afraid only such a talented person like Hero Qin ever find this kind of rare event." What was this saying?

"Right, it must have been his luck."

Unexpectedly losing everything could also depend on luck? This was simply unreasonable.

“Although Hero Qin has lost this time, but his luck will certainly be much better at other matters. Gambler’s luck should not affect other things, but when the gambler is a good person, his luck in other matters will be affected and become better.”

Mmm, this might have some truth in it, at least Qin Ge felt so, because he had filled 4-5 catties of wine into his stomach. If a person’s belly could carry ten catty of wine, that would really be a lie. And as the wine filled the stomach, the pocket would certainly become very empty.

Everybody else was watching the next table and looked on at the three dices in the bowl. Three sixes. The golden beard had unexpectedly produced three sixes just like that, everyone really admired him.

Qin Ge suddenly felt that the golden beard could also be considered a great person just like him. Only a money winner in a gambling establishment could be called a true hero.

Therefore Qin Ge started to leave.
He was walking shakily as he bumped into a person.
A monk.

Qin Ge frowned and muttered, “ Why do I always meet with monks today? No wonder I keep losing.”

That monk was actually smiling and said, “The benefactor has met several monks today?”

Qin Ge said, “Including you, twice.”

The monk said with a smile, “Including me, only once.”

Qin Ge walked closer to him and looked at him carefully. He suddenly discovered that this monk with a round smiling

face, was the monk he had met just a moment ago.

END OF CHAPTER 16

Chapter 17: Heroes and Drunkard

One

Not only was the monk here, but the taoist priest and the scholar had also came back.

Qin Ge rubbed his eyes and said, "How did I get here?"

The monk said, "You are originally here."

Qin Ge looked around, but he needed to turn his head around too for that.

The monk said with a smile, "This place is not hell, but it isn't that far away from it."

Sometimes the gambling establishment and hell were really not that far apart.

Qin Ge rubbed his eyes again and said, "Didn't you leave not a moment ago?"

The monk nodded and said, "Since we can come, we can also leave."

Qin Ge said, "Why have you come now?"

The monk said, "Since we can leave, we can also come."

Qin Ge thought about it and muttered, "It makes sense. What the monk is saying really makes a lot of sense."

The monk said, "Because the monk is a monk."

Qin Ge thought about that and laughed suddenly, "Makes sense, you make sense again."

The monk said, "You know why we left a moment ago?"

Qin Ge shook his head.

The monk said, "So you could gain 50,000 taels."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "I have already said, you are a sensible person."

The monk said, "Do you know now why we have come again?"

Qin Ge said, "In order to let me gain 50,000 taels again?"

The monk said, "No."

Qin Ge said, "As soon as you leave, I gain 50,000 taels, as soon as I lose everything, you come back again, why shouldn't it be good?"

The monk said, "That is why it is not good."

Qin Ge said, "Why not?"

The monk said, "Because you lose it too quickly."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "Therefore you would not leave this time?"

The monk said, "Right."

Qin Ge stared at him and suddenly said loudly, "You really will not leave?"

The monk said, "A monk does not lie."

Qin Ge said, "Fine, if you really will not leave, I will leave then." He laughed while walking outside. At the entrance, suddenly he turned his head and said, "I will leave first, where should I wait for you?"

The monk pointed at above and said, "Up there!"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "You think I can return there now?"

The monk smiled.

A person who fell from above would not find it easy to climb back up.

Even if you had climbed back up, if you were not careful, you could fall down again.

And fell down much quicker too.

Two

Qin Ge's body kept falling down and should have stayed down.

But luckily Tian SiSi was there to prop him up.

Unexpectedly when such a character like Qin Ge left that gambling establishment, no one else had come out.

Tian SiSi felt uncertain about him, but she had also felt very angry for him.

Even if Qin Ge had not been a great person, at least he had been a big customer there, moreover he had lost so much, the golden beard ought to have taken care of him.

In fact, she was so enraged a moment ago that she had called the golden beard to account for him, "Couldn't you see that he was drunk already?"

The golden beard smiled and said, "The wine here is free."

Tian SiSi said, "Since you knew that he was drunk, why did you allow him to leave?"

The golden beard said, "This place is not a jail, regardless of who wants to leave, we cannot prevent them."

Tian SiSi said, "You should have at least looked after him."

The golden beard said, "How do you want me to look after him?"

Tian SiSi said, "At least find him a place to sleep, you shouldn't let him keel over dead drunk on the road."

The golden beard coldly said, "This place is not an inn."

Tian SiSi said, "But you are actually his friend."

The golden beard said, "A person who opens a gambling establishment does not have any friend."

Tian SiSi said, "Do you think he will come again next time?"

The golden beard said, "As long as he has money, he will come again next time. This time he goes away crawling, but he will come again the same way next time." He smiled and then said, "When he comes here again, that is not to become friends with anyone."

Tian SiSi said, "You cannot make him an exception?"

The golden beard said, "Why should he be an exception?"

Tian SiSi said, "He is ultimately a famous hero."

The golden beard coldly said, "This place has no provision for friends or heroes."

This was the golden beard's final answer.

In their eyes, there were only two kinds of people in world: winners and losers.

They should never sympathized with losers.

And there was probably one kind of people that was worst than losers, losers who were dead drunk.

Qin Ge was not completely dead drunk, he had some awareness at least.

He finally found out that someone was holding him, after a very long time he still could not quite see who was holding him.

He narrowed his eyes to focus on the person, and after a very long time he suddenly said, "You are drunk too."

Tian SiSi said, "I haven't drunk any wine, how can I be drunk?"

Qin Ge said, "If you are not drunk yet, why do you want me to hold you?"

Tian SiSi said, "You are not holding me, I am holding you."

Qin Ge laughed and pointed at Tian SiSi's nose and said, "You are really not drunk yet? Your nose is so crooked that it splits into the two ears."

Tian SiSi wished she could shove him into the sewer, as she clenched her teeth, "Can you stand straight?"

Qin Ge said, "Cannot."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because I must get down."

He lowered his voice and mysteriously said, "Do you know why I have to get down?"

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "Because there is no monk there?"

Qin Ge laughed, "Right, that monk is already inside that gambling establishment, chanting the scripture." He laughed so hilariously such that he had trouble breathing.

Tian SiSi looked at him with exasperation, she really did not know where she should take him. Qin Ge suddenly flushed forward to the corner and vomited non stop.

He vomited many, many times, Tian SiSi also hoped that he did that.

"Once a person vomits, perhaps he can become sober then."

She thought so because she had never really been truly drunk.

A truly drunk person would never become sober like that, after he vomited, the tipsy feeling welled up and he became even more drunk.

After Qin Ge vomited, he had lain down immediately, and within a very short period, he had already thunderously snored.

Tian SiSi became really anxious and said loudly, "Hey, quick, how can you sleep here?"

Qin Ge could no longer hear anything.

Tian SiSi then shook him really hard, after a very long time, finally Qin Ge narrowed his eyes.

His eyes were only a third of the usual size, but his tongue was twice as big.

Tian SiSi worriedly said, "If you sleep here, how would others see you? Don't forget that you are a true man, a big hero."

Qin Ge replied with a smile, "Herohow much does a heroic value worth? Can I get something in the gambling

establishment if I sell it?"

He lowered his voice, "Can I tell you a secret?"

Tian SiSi gave a forced smile and said, "Go ahead."

Qin Ge said, "In reality, I do not really want to be a hero, it just doesn't feel any better."

Once he said it, he began to snore sonorously again.

Tian SiSi did not know what else to do.

This person could not be shaken awake, propping him up was also useless.

When a person got drunk, he would become much heavier to prop up.

Tian SiSi really wanted to just abandon him, but it was a pity that she was not that kind of person, moreover she was still thinking of Qin Ge as her hero, a great person.

Many girls would faint because of the excitement just by hearing of Qin Ge's name.

If they saw Qin Ge like this, how would their hearts feel now?

Because they could not see this, therefore they were all much luckier than Tian SiSi.

Tian SiSi sighed and saw that bright red silk handkerchief on Qin Ge's neck.

The red silk handkerchief that symbolized the chivalry, the bravery and the warm feeling.

The red silk handkerchief was like the red sun which just arose.

But what did this red silk handkerchief represent now?

Like a cleaning rag.

A rag that had cleaned 7 or 8 tables, a rag that had also a mix of sweat, wine, and some other things that were vomited by Qin Ge,

How would those sentimental young girls feel now if they saw this red silk handkerchief on his neck? Tian SiSi did not dare to think.

“In any event, he is only like this when he gets drunk. Everyone can get drunk, doing evil is the one that cannot be forgiven.”

Tian SiSi sighed gently, squatted and wiped Qin Ge’s face with her own silk handkerchief.

Her silk handkerchief was certainly also red, red like the warm blood of a sweetheart.

But her blood was not as warm as when she started in this morning.

Not because she was disappointed with Qin Ge, but mainly because she did not feel well. She tried to vomit to feel better, but nothing came out. So the person with an empty belly, standing in the windy evening in a dark small lane, was accompanying a thunderously snoring drunkard. How could her blood feel warm up in this situation?

Three

Dawn.

The sun seemed to suddenly shine brightly, when Tian SiSi realized that she had fallen asleep a while ago. She did not know how she could fall asleep. Qin Ge still lied down besides the sewer. His snoring sound had finally become softer.

Tian SiSi had finally stood up in that corner of a wall, some pain shot up her neck so she had to rotate her neck a couple of times, before she suddenly realized something strange.

There was a blanket on her body.

Yesterday evening she certainly did not have this blanket, because she was feeling at that time very cold, very hungry, sitting worriedly in this corner of a wall, and not really knowing how this night should pass.

She was thinking about that big-headed ghost, eating to the fullest, and probably lying down on a soft bed maybe with a woman like Zhang Haoer besides him. That was the last thing she remembered. Then she suddenly fell asleep.

“Where did this blanket come from?”

This blanket was just like a meat pie, it could not have just fallen from the sky.

Did Qin Ge wake suddenly in the midnight, and found a piece of blanket to cover her? Qin Ge seemed to have slept where he dropped down, his posture did not even seemed to change at all.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, thinking furiously while standing still.

Thinking it over, there could only be someone who would cover her with this blanket.

But she did not believe that this person would do that. Or she would rather not believe it.

When Qin Ge was awake, he stood very, very straight, but when he was sleeping, he did not look very good. He just looked like a sun-dried shelled shrimp.

This place was luckily a dead-end lane, only several houses' back doors were in this lane. Last night, she was so confused that she did not know how they got to this lane, but she began to think that they had been really lucky. If some people saw Lady Tian sleeping in this lane, that might have brought disgrace to the family.

But presently, the day had become brighter, at any time, there might some people walking through those back doors. Tian SiSi set a firm resolution that she would wake up Qin Ge without fail. So she really shook him hard to wake him up.

Finally Qin Ge shouted out after he opened his eyes, "What are you doing? My head is splitting apart being shaken by you."

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "If it split apart that would be best, that would be the best opportunity to wash the inside of your head."

At last Qin Ge began to recognize his surrounding and herself, he smiled suddenly, "It is you, how can you get here?"

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "Because I met a drunkard."

She was determined originally to appear before Qin Ge as a gentle, sympathetic, and a very attractive woman who certainly could become a good wife. But her temperament soon got the better of her, and she had completely forgotten her intention.

Qin Ge's hands were holding his head while he did not stop sighing.

Tian SiSi looked at his distressed appearance and could not help asking, "Are you very uncomfortable?"

Qin Ge bitterly said, "Not only uncomfortable, even more uncomfortable than after a heavy illness."

Tian SiSi said, "How can you be so uncomfortable?"

Qin Ge said, "When someone become drunk on the evening, the next day he will feel very uncomfortable."

Tian SiSi said, "Since you know that, why did you get drunk?"

Qin Ge sternly said, "When a man drinks, he must appear like a real man."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "When you drink like that can you called a hero? That only says that you are a drunkard."

Qin Ge said, "A hero is good, a drunkard is also good, in short, I am a man, much better than being like a woman."

Tian SiSi said, "An effeminate person at least would feel much more comfortable than you."

Qin Ge shook his head and said, "This is a man's problem, you a woman, should not ask too much about it." He finally stood up and patted Tian SiSi's shoulder, "Let's leave, I must find something to drink."

Tian SiSi widened her eyes and said, "You want to drink?"

Qin Ge said, "Certainly."

Tian SiSi said, "You are not afraid of being uncomfortable?"

Qin Ge said, "Being uncomfortable is one thing, while drinking is another thing. You a woman will not understand that." He continued, "Moreover when I drink this time, this wine is to bring me back to life, I won't feel uncomfortable then."

Tian SiSi said, "If you get drunk today, won't you feel uncomfortable tomorrow?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Tomorrow is another day. Moreover, if I am feeling uncomfortable tomorrow, I can

drink again to relieve it.”

Tian SiSi sighed and muttered, “Now I know how one can become a drunkard.”

Qin Ge simply had not listened to her, after brushing his clothes quickly to clean up, he arranged the red silk handkerchief around his neck, stood up straight, stuck out the chest, and walked towards the other end of the lane.

A person who had lied down near the sewer should really stuck out his chest when going outside. Even if the whole body felt awful, the face could not reveal even a little bit of uncomfortable appearance. Although he did not necessarily looked glowing with health, he still retained his heroic spirit, and that bright red silk handkerchief was tidily arranged, fluttering in the wind.

Tian SiSi also had no alternative but to acknowledge that the silk material that made his clothing was really good.

Qin Ge was waiting for her at the end of the lane and smiled, “How is my appearance now?”

Tian SiSi could not help but smile sweetly, “At least you do not look like a drunken cat.”

She continued, “Where are you going to drink?”

Qin Ge said, “Certainly the biggest teahouse.”

Tian SiSi said, “Teahouse?”

Qin Ge said, “At this time, only the teahouse is open.”

Tian SiSi said, “Do they sell wine in the teahouse?”

Qin Ge said with a smile, “In the teahouse, besides the tea, almost anything is available.”

Tian SiSi was unable to restrain her smile, but immediately frowned and said, "Do you have money?"

Qin Ge said, "No." He replied very simply.

Tian SiSi's eyebrows wrinkled even more and said, "If you don't have money, how will you buy the wine?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "When I drink why do I need money?"

Tian SiSi said, "What will you use then?"

Qin Ge stuck out his chest and said, "As soon as so I goes in, a lot of people will offer me to drink with them."

Tian SiSi said, "You feel all right if others treat you to drink?"

Qin Ge said, "Why should I be embarrassed? When they treat me, they shine brighter; I drink their wine, they get to lift up their faces." He smiled and also said, "A famous hero has his own advantages."

Tian SiSi also smiled.

Although she discovered that this person was not as great as her imagination, but he had exposed a lot of himself to her. After all he was also young. He had a lot of shortcomings, but he also had his own superiority. He was a hero, and yet a unique person. A living, vibrant man.

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "If the others had seen your drunk appearance last night, they certainly would not offer you drink."

Qin Ge said, "No one will see that appearance. When I gamble, I am very straightforward, also when I drink. When I am drunk and have lost everything, I will not let anyone else

see my miserable appearance.” He smiled, then said, “You have also heard how I have suffered hundreds of knife cuts?”

Tian SiSi nodded and said with a smile, “I have listened to that story at least a hundred times.”

Qin Ge said, “Did you hear that after I was stabbed, I crawled out of that place, and that night I was hurting everywhere that I had to sway back and forth non stop crying out for help to save me?”

Tian SiSi said, “No.”

Qin Ge said with a smile, “So now you should get what I mean?”

Tian SiSi indeed had understood.

In jiang-hu, people would see and hear about one side of the magnificent deeds.

But actually forgot that behind the bright lights was the gloomy side of things.

Not just about Qin Ge, but throughout the ages, the big heroes were no exception to these tales.

Just like when people upheld a great general with power, honor, and prestige, they had actually forgotten the ten thousands of people who had died in the battlefield, scattered as mere white bones.

Tian SiSi sighed and said, “I did not realize you really understood many things.”

Qin Ge said, “When a person is mixed up for many years in jiang-hu, you get to learn many things.”

Tian SiSi blinked and said, “Do you know how I regarded you last night?”

Qin Ge shook his head.

Tian SiSi smilingly said, "I regarded as you as a boorish fellow, a country bumpkin."

Qin Ge said, "A country bumpkin?"

Tian SiSi said, "Because who in the world had never heard of Zhang ZiFang."

Qin Ge suddenly winked and said, "You thought I really did not know him?"

END OF CHAPTER 17

Chapter 18: The Taste of a Big Hero

One

Tian SiSi said, "You knew him?"

Qin Ge said, "Zhang ZiFang was Zhang Liang, one of the three outstanding heroes in the Han dynasty. In the history book, although his appearance was like a maiden, but his heart was like a soaring eagle. Relying on his single hammer in bo-lang-sha (abundant wave of sands), he had stamped his feet forever in famous biographies."

Tian SiSi widened her eyes in shock as she blurted out, "You really know?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "That's right."

Tian SiSi said, "Then why did you say those things last night?"

Qin Ge said, "I did that intentionally."

Tian SiSi said, "Intentionally? Why did you intentionally play the fool?"

Qin Ge said, "Because I knew that everybody worshipped me, because I am the type of person who did not understand anything but was just supposed to fight all out, to gamble all out, and to drink all out."

Tian SiSi said, "Why do others want to worship this kind of person?"

Qin Ge, "Because they themselves could not become like this person."

He smiled, "Regardless of what we are doing, going all out in anything is not an easy matter."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "I understand now because I have seen your uncomfortable aftermath."

Qin Ge said, "That is right, going all out requires also that you might have to endure hardship afterwards."

Tian SiSi said, "But instead of going all out on many things why don't you become an intelligent hero? Wouldn't others admire such an appearance as well?"

Qin Ge said, "Others won't admire such person."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because there are many people who are like that, not just myself."

Tian SiSi said, "If you were also such a person, others would not think that is strange, right?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "That is right, because they find me strange, only then can I be so famous today, only then can I become the idols in the minds of young fellows."

He thought carefully and sighed, "If I turned into another person, others certainly will be disappointed in me."

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore, after you were drunk you could acknowledge that being a hero did not taste all that good."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "But there are many different kinds of heroes, why did you choose this kind?"

Qin Ge said, "Because others already regarded me as this kind of hero, then it was no longer possible to change it."

Tian SiSi said, "You do want to change now?"

Qin Ge said, "Not really."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because I have gradually become accustomed to it, sometimes even I felt that this type of hero was really me."

Tian SiSi said, "Really?"

Qin Ge sighed, "Whether it is the truth or not, no one could distinguish it clearly, not even myself."

Tian SiSi was silent for a very long time, she suddenly gave a long sigh, "I do not understand."

Qin Ge said, "You do not need to understand, because this is life."

Tian SiSi pondered this matter for a very long time before she slowly nodded and sighed, "If I had not met you, I would never have thought that you could be such a person."

Qin Ge said, "What did you think I was?"

Tian SiSi rotated her eyes and said, "What do you think?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "I think you considered me a great idol, therefore I would ask you to drink with me."

Two

Perhaps Qin Ge was not a genuinely great person, nor was he a god, but in the minds of people in jiang-hu, he was indeed a hero who received open-armed welcome everywhere.

So then Tian SiSi also drank.

Now they were walking on a very lonesome and quiet alley, both sides of the walls were very high, the branches of the trees extended from beyond the wall and blocked the extremely scorching heat of the high noon sun.

Tian SiSi suddenly said with a smile, "I did not expect that there were really so many people who offered you to drink with them."

Qin Ge's eyes had become very bright, because he was half tipsy although he was not fully drunk. He looked at the branches above the wall and said slowly, "Do you know why they welcomed me like that?"

Tian SiSi said, "Because you were a hero?"

Qin Ge smiled and said, "That was certainly one of the reasons, but not the most important one."

Tian SiSi said, "What was the most important then?"

Qin Ge said, "The most important was because they knew that I would not be a threat to them, now or ever. Because I am a rough, impulsive, senseless fellow, who will not implicate them in a complex relationship." He smiled a little miserably and then said, "They like me, welcome me, sometimes like theater fans idolizing the famous actors, but they cannot have any conflict between me and their interests."

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "You seem to look down on yourself."

Qin Ge said, "I do not despise myself, I know that I have my success, as far as I know, throughout the ages among the

famous heroes in jiang-hu, I might be the one who gets the best reception.”

Tian SiSi asked, “Don’t you think there are some sincere worshippers among them?”

Qin Ge said with a forced smile, “Certainly there are, but maybe a youth who are not yet an adult, for example...”

Tian SiSi said, “For example myself?”

Qin Ge said with a smile, “Maybe before you know me, at present you are already different.”

Tian SiSi said, “Why?”

Qin Ge said, “Because you have seen matters which many others will never see.”

Tian SiSi pondered that point and said slowly, “Right, indeed I saw some shortcomings which others will not see about you. But I have also seen some of your merits, which others will also never see.”

Qin Ge said, “Oh?”

Tian SiSi said, “You undoubtedly have a lot of weaknesses, but you also have a lot of attractive qualities. Really, you even have much more attractive qualities than the majority of people.” She smiled, also said, “But a man like you can only be a good friend, not a good husband.”

Qin Ge said, “Before you wanted to marry me?”

Tian SiSi dangled her head, blushed and said with a smile, “Indeed I meant to.”

Qin Ge said, “Now? You are already very disappointed in me?”

Tian SiSi said, “No, only

Qin Ge said, “Only you are not fully satisfied.”

Tian SiSi said, “No.”

Qin Ge said, “Then what?”

Tian SiSi sighed gently and said, “Perhaps because I considered you too high before, whereas now I can understand you more profoundly.”

Qin Ge said, “Because you have understood me, therefore you are no longer willing to marry me? Why does a girl always like to marry a person who they do not understand?”

Tian SiSi had not replied, she did not know how she should reply.

She had not been disappointed in Qin Ge, because Qin Ge was indeed a big hero.

The kind of hero that she could not really understand.

But regardless of which kind of heroes a person was, he was not a god, even a god may have his own shortcomings, moreover a mere human?

Now she felt she could not marry Qin Ge, because the Qin Ge that she saw was not the same Qin Ge that she fantasized.

She was not disappointed, she only felt a little disconsolate.

The disconsolate feeling of an adult.

She detected suddenly that she seemed to have grown up a lot.

Qin Ge was staring at her.

She had pulled up Qin Ge's hand gently, with a reluctant smile she smiled, "Although I cannot marry you, but we may forever be very good friends."

Qin Ge had not spoken — — he seemed to want to say something, but he had not said anything.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said gently, "YouAre you very disappointed?"

Qin Ge stared at her and suddenly laughed, "How can I be disappointed when many women in the world can be my wife, but where else can I find several women who can understand me and be a friend of mine?"

Tian SiSi glanced over and sighed suddenly, "But why did you have to let me understand you so well? "

Qin Ge's eyes flashed and he said softly with a smile, "Perhaps because my luck is not very good."

Tian SiSi blinked and sweetly said, "Perhaps because your luck is actually good."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "In the future, the man that can marry you, he is the lucky one."

Tian SiSi lowered her head and suddenly did not speak. Without any particular reason she unexpectedly had remembered that big-headed person.

Where was he?

Was he with Tian Xin?

After a very long time, she looked up and said, "I seem to recognize this road."

Qin Ge nodded.

Tian SiSi said, "After a while, we will get to the golden beard's gambling establishment."

Qin Ge again nodded.

Tian SiSi frowned, "Why do you want to go there?"

Qin Ge had smiled and said, "I want to see that monk again, don't you think he is very strange?"

Tian SiSi said, "He is indeed a little strange, but maybe you are not really that eager to see him."

Qin Ge said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi pursed her lips and said with a smile, "Perhaps it is your hands that itch."

Qin Ge blinked and said, "Even if I want to bet, what do I bet with? With my fingers?"

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "If you don't have any money to bet, you still can watch others play."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "You are mistaken."

Tian SiSi said, "Then why do you want to go there? Do you really want to meet that monk?"

Qin Ge smiled very mysteriously as he slowly said, "Right, because I find that this monk is a lot more interesting than other monks. "

A monk should not be interesting. When a monk became interesting, others were probably losing their senses.

END OF CHAPTER 18

Chapter 19: A Gambling Establishment or a Temple

The monk would chant the scripture in the temple. The compulsive gambler would gamble in the gambling establishment. That would be the normal case.

But when a monk chanted the scripture in a gambling establishment, or when a compulsive gambler gambled in a temple, that was not only abnormal, moreover it would be very absurd, very strange.

Strange matters were always caused by strange reasons. Strange matters would also caused other strange matters.

One

“Why do you always say that the gambling establishment is not that far from hell?”

“Because a person who frequently goes to the gambling establishment, very often ends up perishing in hell.”

“The gambling establishment is really that fearful?”

“Indeed, if there is someone in your family who is a compulsive gamblers, you should be fearful.”

“Oh?”

“If the head of the family is a compulsive gambler, this family can be in hell already.”

“I heard that when a person has lost everything, he could resort easily to selling his own wife and children.”

“Sometimes he would bet on his own life.”

“Oh, that is indeed fearful.”

“If the closest place to hell is the gambling establishment, then what is the closest place to heaven?”

“A temple?”

“Good, but have you ever thought the similarity between gambling establishments and temples?”

“No, these two kind of places are simply not related at all.”

“Do you notice that gambling establishments and temples are usually located in a quite desolate place?”

“I just realize that now, but then I don’t understand.”

“What don’t you understand?”

“I know why a gambling establishment would be located in a quite desolate place, but why would a temple be similar? A person who burns incense at the temple will not lose his face nor violate the law.”

“Because when the temple is located afar, the more desolate it is, the more mysterious it feels.”

“Mysterious?”

“Mysterious feel causes people to feel curious and therefore worship.”

“Right, sometimes when people do not understand about things, then they start to fear.”

“Because when they are afraid then they need to worship.”

“Moreover when the people need to travel so far to burn the incense, they can appear to be honest.”

“What you said were almost right, only almost.”

“Almost?”

“After someone goes so far away to burn the incense, then he will certainly feel very hungry, and when he eats while very hungry, then he will always feel that the taste of the food is special.”

“Therefore people always feel that the food in the temple is specially delicious.”

“You have finally understood, the element room is very often the biggest attraction for people to go to the temple.”

“I know that when a lot of people burn the incense, they also go for a walk around the countryside at Qingming festival.”

“Therefore the smart monks will certainly locate the temple in a very far away, very remote place.”

“I also think that what you have just said are very sensible, but if a monk hears what you said he might feel irritated.”

“A monk cannot feel irritated.”

“Why?”

“The addictions to wine, beauty, wealth, and anger , the four elements are mere illusions, you have forgotten this too?”

“Right, since anger is also empty, a monk certainly cannot get irritated.”

“The one who gets irritated is not a real monk.”

“Therefore being irritated is not a problem.”

“No problem at all.”

Two

A remote lane.

The end of the lane was the golden beard's gambling establishment.

Qin Ge and Tian SiSi entered this lane.

By now the dark cloud had suddenly covered up the moonlight and a faint thunderclap like a rolling drum could be heard from that dark cloud.

The strong wind rolled up and pushed along, the weather was gloomy.

Tian SiSi watched the weather and said, “It looks like a rainstorm will come soon.”

Qin Ge said, “Rainy weather is the perfect weather to gamble.”

Tian SiSi said, “Since you already know that gambling is very fearful, why do you still bet?”

Qin Ge smiled and said, “Because I am not a good person and also not intelligent.”

Tian SiSi's sweet voice, “You are only a hero.”

Qin Ge said, “A good smart person usually cannot be a good hero.”

He suddenly shut his mouth, because he suddenly discovered that the courtyard of that gambling establishment seemed to be filled with swirls of black little pieces creating a trace of black fog whipped around by the strong winds, everything danced in the air.

This fog which did not look like the fog brought a sense of surreptitious terror in this kind of cloudy weather.

Tian SiSi changed countenance said, "What is that?"

Qin Ge shook his head, and sped up his walk.

The gambling establishment's worn-out front door continuously swayed in the wind, continuously making rattling noise.

The door unexpectedly was wide open without anyone guarding the door. Did this heavily guarded entrance to the gambling establishment change suddenly into an open door policy?

The black fog became thicker in the courtyard.

Qin Ge stepped forward and fished one piece.

Tian SiSi who followed, asked immediately, "Actually what is that?"

Qin Ge had not replied, but instead had given the thing in his hand to Tian SiSi.

This thing was soft, gentle, supple like silk.

Tian SiSi blurted out, "It is hair."

Qin Ge calmly said, "It is hair."

Tian SiSi said, "Where do these many hairs come from?"

The abundant hairs in that courtyard danced in the air in the strong winds, bringing an unspeakable surreptitious terror.

Qin Ge hesitatingly said, "I wonder whether that monk is also inside?"

Tian SiSi said, "Why are you looking for that monk?"

Qin Ge said, "Perhaps because your question can only be answered by him."

He opened the door and walked in.

He was stunned.

Tian SiSi was walking with him.

Tian SiSi was also stunned.

Everyone who walked in would all be stunned.

The monk was in this house.

Not just a monk, but a houseful of monk!

If you were in a temple, no matter how many monks you saw, you would not feel strange, you would not be stunned.

But this place was a gambling establishment.

There was no gambling tables, gambling paraphernalia, nor gamblers.

Now in this gambling establishment there were only monks.

Several dozens big and small, old and young monks, with downcast eyes, the nose pointed downward, the palms gathered together, sitting cross-legged. Every single one of them was bald. So bald, that the light was perfectly reflected off it.

Tian SiSi now suddenly understood where those hairs in the courtyard had come from.

But she had not understood actually why these people had suddenly shaved their head clean to become monks.

It was very quiet in the house.

There was no sound of dice, of card, of eating and drinking, and of chanting.

Although there were monks, they actually did not chant the scripture.

Maybe because they have not learned how to chant?

Qin Ge was looking for the monk who yesterday could chant the scripture.

He walked slowly, looking at each one before he stopped suddenly in front of a monk.

Tian SiSi saw surprise on his face, and immediately saw past him at this monk and felt like seeing a ghost.

This monk cast down his eyes, the nose pointed downward, sitting cross-legged, not only clean-shaven, but also totally bald. This monk's face was very familiar.

Tian SiSi looked for a while before she suddenly shouted, "The golden beard!"

This monk was unexpectedly the golden beard.

Nearby him was another monk, a face that seemed to have been hit by the raindrop of sand beach. "Zhao Gang with a pockmarked face!"

This bloodsucker could really turn into a monk?

Qin Ge stared at the golden beard, after a very long time, then he patted his shoulder and said, "Are you sick?"

The golden beard at last looked up and put his palms together, "Who is the benefactor speaking to?"

Qin Ge said, "With you, the golden beard."

The golden beard said, "Amida Buddha, the golden beard has died, how can the benefactor speak to him?"

Qin Ge said, "You are not the golden beard?"

The golden beard said, "The monk's name is Ming Gang."
(bright light)

Qin Ge stared at him for a while and said, "How could the golden beard die suddenly?"

The golden beard said, "When a person should die he would die."

Qin Ge said, "But when he should not have died?"

The golden beard said, "When he should not have died sooner or later he also must die."

He sat cross-legged continuously without any expression. If anyone saw him now, he would not believe that yesterday he was the boss of a gambling establishment.

Right now he just looked like a rigorous eminent monk.

Tian SiSi's eyeball rotated and said suddenly, "The golden beard has already died, how about his newly married wife?"

A newly married person who is afraid of his wife, so afraid that he would shave all his beard, could only have one reason. Because he really, really loved his wife. Because when he really loved her that was when he became really afraid of her. Although the golden beard was trying hard to control himself, but some perspiration had dropped from his head.

Tian SiSi secretly took a meaningful glance at Qin Ge and said, "What do you think will happen to a newly married wife whose husband has died?"

Qin Ge smiled and said easily, “Naturally his wife will remarry!”

Tian SiSi said, “Remarry? So quick?”

Qin Ge said, “She would remarry, sooner or later.”

Tian SiSi said, “Marry whom?”

Qin Ge said, “Perhaps a taoist priest, perhaps a scholar, the red flowers, green leaves and blue lotus root are just parts of a big family. “

He had not finished his sentence, the golden beard had roared suddenly and threw himself at him. A person who could become a gambling establishment’s boss would certainly have some real skills. His fingers spread out like an eagle’s claw, seemingly wishing to cut off Qin Ge’s neck.

Immediately Qin Ge’s neck shrank backward, but a wooden drumbeater also flew in the midair and “whack” had knocked on the bald head of the golden beard.

This knock was really heavy.

Although the golden beard’s head had not been broken, but he had been knocked dizzy. He stepped back and with a “thud” had sat back on the cushion.

“Amida Buddha, virtuous, virtuous.”

A monk’s mouth proclaimed the blessing and walked slowly forward, his hand was holding the drum without the wooden beater.

The monk who could chant the scripture had finally appeared.

He arrived slowly in front of the golden beard and sighed, “All things of visible form and substance are empty, beauty

is also empty, if you cannot control this thought, how can you become a monk?"

The golden beard shook violently and with a hissing voice he gritted, "I never really want to be a monk, it is you who force me"

He had not finished his sentence when 'whack", the hand had knocked again on his head.

This monk's hand seemed to be harder than the wooden beater.

The golden beard was unexpectedly knocked back hard, the bald head immediately produced a big bump.

This monk said, "Who compels you to be a monk?"

The golden beard said, "No one... nobody."

The monk said, "Do you want to be a monk?"

The golden beard said, "Yesyes"

The monk put his palms together and said, "Amida Buddha, the sea of bitterness knows no bounds, repent and be saved, lay down the butcher knife, stand up for Buddha..... virtuous, virtuous, salute Amida Buddha, there is no other Amida Buddha"

He unexpectedly started to chant scripture.

The golden beard crawled and sobbed loudly.

Tian SiSi looked stunned, before finally turning her head to Qin Ge and gave a forced smile, "This monk really can chant the scripture. "

Qin Ge said, "Not only he can chant the scripture, but he can also knock the person's head."

Tian SiSi said, "Knocks even better than chanting the scripture."

Qin Ge said, "Although he is not chanting the scripture in the wrong place, but he had actually knocked the wrong head."

Tian SiSi said, "Whose head should he knock then?"

Qin Ge said, "His own."

The monk suddenly stopped his chanting and turned to look at him before sighing, "It is you."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

The monk said, "How did you get here?"

Qin Ge said, "Since I can leave, why can't I come?"

The monk said, "You have already left, you should not have come."

Qin Ge said, "Who says so?"

The monk said, "The monk."

Qin Ge said, "Why does the monk say so?"

The monk said, "The monk can brush off someone, can knock the person's head. "

Qin Ge sighed and said, "It seems that this monk wants me to leave."

The monk said, "Yesterday you forced me to leave, today I am forcing you to leave, that is justice."

Qin Ge said, "If I leave, will there be someone who will give the monk 50,000 taels?"

The monk said, "No."

Qin Ge said, "Then I will not leave."

The monk lowered his face and said, "You know what place is this?"

Qin Ge said, "This seems like a gambling establishment, but also like a temple."

The monk said, "Yesterday it was a gambling establishment, today it is a temple."

Qin Ge smiled and said, "All people may come to the temple to burn incense including the prostitutes, why can't I come?"

END OF CHAPTER 19

Chapter 20: Haunted House

The monk said, "What will you do?"

Qin Ge said, "Certainly gamble, a compulsive gambler if he does not gamble for one day, the whole body will all itch."

The monk said, "The temple is not a place to gamble."

Qin Ge said, "Since a monk can come to the gambling establishment to chant, why can't a compulsive gambler come to the temple to gamble?"

The monk continued to stare at him before smiling and said, "There are only monks here, who will bet with you?"

Qin Ge said, "The monk."

The monk said, "The monk does not bet."

Qin Ge said, "Buddha Tathagata also bet, why doesn't the monk bet?"

The monk knitted his brows, "Buddha Tathagata also bet? Bet with who?"

Qin Ge said, "The heavenly great sage Sun Wukong."

The monk said, "What did he bet on?"

Qin Ge said, "He bet that Sun Wukong would not be able to come out of his palms."

The monk also said with a smile, "Even if what you say is true, the monk also does not have the money to gamble."

Qin Ge said, "The monk can solicit money, how can he not have the money?"

The monk said, "Solicits money from where?"

Qin Ge said, "As far as I know these monks yesterday were all benefactors."

The monk said, "Oh?"

Qin Ge said, "The golden beard already has become a monk, the wealth is empty, therefore his mountain of money naturally has been all granted to the monk."

He smiled and said, "I heard that when the monk solicits money sometimes he can be much more menacing than a robber amassing money."

The monk was staring at him, the round face suddenly became very cloudy as he coldly said, "You can amass money?"

Qin Ge said, "Cannot."

The monk said, "You can solicit money?"

Qin Ge said, "Cannot."

The monk said, "What do you use to bet?"

Qin Ge said, "Myself."

The monk said, "How can a person bet with himself?"

Qin Ge said, "If I lose, I will become a monk with you. If you lose, you turn over this eon to me, also all the monks here."

The monk said, "How do you want to bet?"

Qin Ge said, "Since you can knock heads, let us gamble on knocking heads."

The monk said, "Knock whose heads?"

Qin Ge said, "You knock me, I knock you, who can knock the first is the winner.. "

The monk coldly said, "The head is not a drum, it can be knocked open."

Qin Ge said, "Do you know which kind of head is the easiest to knock open?"

The monk laughed.

In his laughter, he suddenly disappeared.

The floor was made of blocks of stone. The block stone underneath the monk suddenly split open, and the monk had fallen down. Then the stone immediately closed again.

This place was originally a secret gambling establishment, that underneath the gambling establishment was a secret tunnel, that was not really a strange matter.

Only Tian SiSi was stunned and after a long time, she said, "It seems like he does not want to bet with you."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "He also knows that it is easiest to knock open one kind of a head, the bald one."

Tian SiSi said, "You really want to knock open his head?"

Qin Ge said, "Only knock it open a little."

Tian SiSi said, "Why? He does not look like a bad person."

Qin Ge said, "But he should not compel others to be monks."

Tian SiSi said, "If all the people who opened gambling establishments in the world could become monks, wouldn't the world be a lot more peaceful?"

Qin Ge said, "All these monks, did they all open gambling establishments?"

Tian SiSi said, "Perhaps they themselves want to"

She had not finished her sentence when all the monks in there had called out suddenly, "We do not want to be monks!"

"A fine and healthy person, who wants to be a monk?"

"I have my family, a wife and children, we enjoy life from day to day, why do we have to be monks?"

The golden beard called out the loudest, he had knelt down unexpectedly and said, "We are all compelled, so we can only asked Hero Qin to uphold justice for us."

Qin Ge sighed and said, "I thought you were a real man, how come you can be compelled by this person to be monks? "

The golden beard said, "Because if we did not become monks, he wanted our lives!"

Qin Ge said, "You are 20-30 people, why do you still fear the monk?"

The golden beard said aggrieved, "Because that monk was really too ominous, too formidable, moreover he also had the scholar and the taoist priest to help him!"

Qin Ge said, "All of you were not their match?"

The golden beard sighed, "If not so, how could we all be monks?"

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "If you all become monks, what is the advantage to him?"

The golden beard said, "Certainly he benefits."

Tian SiSi said, "What advantage?"

The golden beard said painstakingly, "He said to become monks, the four elements were merely illusions, therefore when we became monks, all the family property should also be turned over to him."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "If that is so, everyone including myself would want to knock open his head."

Qin Ge said, "Not just to knock it open a little, but rather knock a big hole on it."

The golden beard rub his own head and said, "But these three people's wugong are not weak at all, that monk, he is really too formidable."

Qin Ge sneered, "I have seen a lot more formidable opponents."

The golden beard's face become clear and he said, "Certainly, as long as Hero Qin is willing to take responsibility for us, we will have the way out."

Qin Ge stepped on the stone that split open with his foot and said, "What place is under this?"

The golden beard said, "I am not too clear."

Qin Ge said, "You are this gambling establishment's boss, how can you not be clear about it?"

The golden beard gave a forced smile and said, "This house was not originally mine."

Qin Ge said, "Whose then?"

The golden beard said, "I do not know."

Qin Ge frowned, "What do you know?"

The golden beard said, "I only know that the master of this house had died many years ago, the whole family had died with him."

Qin Ge said, "Afterwards nobody moved in?"

The golden beard said, "Oh yes, but whoever moved in, moved out again in three days."

Qin Ge said, "Why?"

The golden beard said, "Because this house is haunted."

Tian SiSi blurted out, "Haunted?"

The golden beard said, "This house was originally famous for its ominous nature, so nobody dared to ask about it, therefore we had bought this place really cheaply."

Tian SiSi said, "Did something smell really fishy here?"

The golden beard said, "Sometimes we indeed thought something is wrong with this place, but we are brave people, so we just ignore them."

Tian SiSi said, "Something is wrong?"

The golden beard hesitatingly said, "Sometimes there were sudden strange noises heard underground, sometimes

things that were obviously on the table could disappear suddenly.”

Tian SiSi looked at Qin Ge.

Qin Ge said, “Now how do you plan to manage this?”

The golden beard said, “As long as we don’t have to be monks, you can ask anything from us.”

Qin Ge thought for some time and then said, “Good, you leave first, I will clarify the matters here.”

The golden beard’s face revealed an awkward fear and said, “That monk will not let us leave.”

Qin Ge sneered, “You have no need to be afraid, I will take care of it.”

The golden beard smiled, “Then we are very relieved that Hero Qin can act on our behalf.”

He had not completed his sentence, when all the monks in this house have clambered one after another to escape from the place. Some went through the door, some jumped through the windows. In the blink of an eye, everyone had left, none had remained.

Nobody came out to pursue.

That monk, the taoist priest and scholar had not appeared at all.

Tian SiSi said with a smile, “It looks like your power and prestige was not really small, they did not dare to cross you.”

Qin Ge had not smiled.

Tian SiSi also said, "Where do you think that monk has gone to?"

Qin Ge said, "I hope he did not really get seized by the ghosts."

He lowered his voice, "I think this is the time for you to leave quickly."

Tian SiSi stared at him with big eyes and said, "Why do you want me to leave?"

Qin Ge smiled reluctantly, "Perhaps this place is really fishy."

Although Tian SiSi's complexion had somewhat changed, she shook her head and said, "I will not leave."

Qin Ge said, "Why?"

Tian SiSi said, "Don't forget that I am your friend."

Qin Ge said, "But"

Tian SiSi did not let him speak, but continued, "Since I am your friend, I cannot abandon you to cope with the three of them here, even if you really have to go to hell, I am also with you."

She had not finished her sentence when Qin Ge himself had really fallen down.

"Thud", the opened stone had shut again.

Tian SiSi was really startled as she tried to kick open the stone.

No matter how hard she kick, nothing seemed to move.

The stone was very thick, the blocks fit each other perfectly without any seams, no one could see where the

secret mechanisms.

The rainstorm had not come, the strong winds were blowing through the window.

There were noises from the windows, and from the door.

Tian SiSi could not bear calling out in alarm and said, "Qin Ge, where are you? Do you hear me?" No response.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, suddenly she turned around to run outside.

Outside a very big wind blew in.

Tian SiSi just ran out the door when a strong wind crashed in, bringing the silky little things everywhere. Suddenly a great amount of hairs curled around her, in her face, surrounding her neck. Gently, softly, coldly, like a clammy ghost that touched around her face and blocked her throat.

She nearly stopped breathing, immediately she jumped backward through the door. "Bang" she closed the door and held it close with her body. Only after a very long time, she could breath a sigh of relief.

The wind blew hard outside.

She was the only person in the empty house.

She discovered suddenly that this house was very big.

The house was so big that she felt very tiny and lonely.

Her palms were already clammy with cold sweat as she made an effort to tear off the hairs from her body, her face and her neck.

The hairs actually stuck in her hands, covering her hands with gentleness, softness, calmness.

She wanted to get rid of them but she could not.

“Crack”, the window pane was struck by the wind, the sound of a thunderclap, and continuous clatters of raindrops hitting on every part of the house.

She could not help but shiver as she put up her courage and said loudly, “Anybody in this house? Are all the people here dead already?”

Nobody responded.

She shuddered again.

“Is everyone in this house dead, have they all changed into ghosts?”

But how about that taoist priest and the scholar?

The opposite site of the room also featured a big leafed door, the door was closed. Could they hid inside there?

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and ran over there as quickly as possible, as if there was something fishy pursuing her from behind.

Luckily, that leafed door was not barred from inside.

Tian SiSi had rushed in.

Inside was a very elegant small living room which would make one feel warm and comfortable.

Tian SiSi just relaxed, when suddenly “crack”, the door had closed behind her.

She was startled and turned around to push the door open, but she could not push it open.

This leafed door had been barred from outside!

Who barred the door?

There was obviously no one outside a moment ago.

Tian SiSi only sensed crawling goosebumps as the cold sweat had soaked her clothes.

She stepped backward one by one, retreated to a table, only then she discovered that the table held three cups of

tea, a book, a string of buddha beads, and a whisk.

The book was the one that the scholar read.

The tea was warm.

Before Tian SiSi came with Qin Ge, that monk, the taoist priest, and the scholar were obviously drinking tea here.

Where were they now?

Tian SiSi sneered and said, "I know where you are, you should just give up any idea of frightening me!"

Actually she did not know anything, she just wanted to raise her own courage.

When she said that, she had been frightened.

The sky was filled with dark cloud, and it was even darker inside the room. In the room nothing looked very clear.

Tian SiSi stood there looking at all direction while seizing up the room. This room was actually arranged very elegantly, moreover there was another leafed door which was covered by a mottled bamboo curtain. The bamboo curtain was let down.

At the opposite wall of this leafed door, a very big landscape painting hung on it depicting a very hazy misty rain scenery, the quality was very excellent, obviously made by a famous painter. At both sides of this picture, there were two lines of couplets.

Tian SiSi had not read clearly what these couplets were saying when she suddenly heard a very strange sound behind, as if the bamboo curtain was rolled up and pushed aside. She turned around in surprise as she could not help letting out a small scream.

The bamboo curtain which was let down, now had suddenly curled up, and the door behind it was now ajar.

Nobody could be seen by the door, as if an invisible ghost had slowly curled up the bamboo curtain.

Tian SiSi gathered her courage again and said in a terrified voice, "Who is it? Come out quickly!"

Nobody came out. Not even a shadow.

Tian SiSi clenched her fists, clenched her teeth and walked forward step by step.

At the same time, she could feel cold sweat continuously flowing down.

She walked very slowly because her legs seemed to give way under her, but she had finally reached and entered this leafed door.

Behind the door was a secret room which did not have any window so it was darker.

In the pitch black room, there was nothing but a person sitting cross-legged at the place.

A monk.

This monk had a round face with hanging eyebrows, and a drum suspended in front of him. He was unexpectedly the same chanting monk that fell downward a moment ago.

Tian SiSi gave a long sigh, in any event, she felt some relief at the sight.

But since the monk was here, how about Qin Ge?

Tian SiSi could not bear saying, "Hey, how did you get here? How about Qin Ge?"

The monk did not say anything and did not move.

Tian SiSi said loudly, "Hey, why don't you speak?"

The monk kept silent, not even opening his eyes, as if he suddenly turned deaf.

Tian SiSi sneeringly said, "You do not need to feign ignorance, if you still do not open your mouth, I will knock open your head."

The monk still feigned ignorance.

Tian SiSi angrily said, "You think I do not dare?"

As soon as Lady Tian's temperament flared up, there was nothing in the world that she would not dare to do. She rushed forward and knocked on this monk's bald head.

The monk body swayed slowly.

Tian SiSi could not help but put out a hand to hold up his clothes and said loudly, "What are you doing, do you want to pretend to be dead?"

The monk could not pretend that he was dead.
The monk had really died!

The monk's face that was originally shiny red had already turned into dead gray•

On the dead gray face, a wisp of blood flowed slowly down. It flowed down from his broad forehead, along the face and the nose, down to the corner of his mouth.

Immediately Tian SiSi's body seemed to shiver continuously, her hands and feet became ice-cold, as she could not help stepping back slowly.

When she drew back, the monk's body slumped forward and his face fell to the floor.

Tian SiSi discovered that the top of his head had a small hole, the blood was flowing from this hole.

“Is this hole caused by my knock?”

No.

She did not knock that heavily, moreover this monk's whole body was stiff as the wood, he must have died for a while.

Who had killed this monk?

Was it Qin Ge? But where was he?

Tian SiSi stood there motionless.

It was as if since the moment she entered this gambling establishment, she had fallen into a sequence of nightmare. From the start it had become more and more mysterious. Where else could you find so many strange things, except in nightmares?

Could she wake up from this nightmare?

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and resolved to abandon everything and left this haunted house. Maybe she could determine better then what to do.

She could not leave.

There was only the leafed door in this room, but it had been locked from outside.

No matter how hard she had tried to push it open or kick it open.

This leafed door was not an iron door, but this preposterous wood was actually harder than the iron, she held a knife in her hand, but with her family's chopping moves, she could not even make a crack on it.

The wall surrounding her was even thicker.

She felt like a wild animal who got trapped by a hunter, not only was she angry and afraid, but she also felt indescribably sorrowful. The biggest sorrow was that nobody

had seen the hunter who had set this trap. Like this nightmare would never ever ended. Tian SiSi wished she could cry and wail loudly, but bitterly she could not.

The blood had gradually congealed on the shaved head. Perhaps only he knew all these secrets, or perhaps he did not.

Who knew?

Tian SiSi gritted her teeth, as long as she had not known how the matter stood, she was not willing to die!

This place was almost like a grave, a grave that would bury her.

So it would bury that monk too?

In any event, she was now in this grave with the monk.

She could have never expected to share this same big grave with a monk.

Now she felt she would not be afraid of any ghosts, she would even welcome them. Thinking of ghosts, she was reminded of that big-headed ghost.

“Where is he? Is he secretly observing me?”

“Did he cover me with that blanket?”

“Does he know now that he will not be able to see me ever again?”

“Would he be sad if he knew?”

END OF CHAPTER 20

Chapter 21: Heart of a Young Girl

Thinking up to this point, she suddenly felt that she must have become very bored.

There were many thousands, ten thousands of other people to think of, why did she have to think of him!

"I am thinking of him here, but who knows who he is thinking of!"

Thereupon she started to think of her father, of Tian Xin, these were originally the people whom she was the most intimate with, but for some reason, whenever she thought of these people, they seemed to always be inferior to when she thought of "him".

"This is perhaps because we have always been together recently."

She also had no alternative but to acknowledge that he was indeed a very difficult person to forget. Perhaps all the monsters in the world were also like that.

Tian SiSi sighed, she felt like she was extremely mentally confused within.

During this moment, indeed she had remembered a lot of matters, had been reminded of a lot of strange questions.

She thought of things east and west, of everything, but she had not thought about one thing- how to leave this room?

A young girl's heart was really very wonderful.

Sometimes she felt sorrowful, sometimes she liked something, sometimes she endured pain, sometimes she became angry, but she seldom felt really afraid.

Being afraid was originally the most primitive, the sincerest sentiment of someone.

But in a young girl's mind, it seemed that not being afraid was also a kind of emotion.

Because they seldom had to think earnestly about it.

Why did you bother to ask a young girl what was she thinking of in front of her enemy? Her reply might surprise you beyond your imagination.

A very intelligent person could ask a lot of young girls a not very intelligent question:

"What do you think is the most frightful matter in the world?"

He would obtain a lot of different replies.

"Afraid of being rejected by the person whom I loved."

"Afraid of being peeped upon by someone when taking a bath."

"Afraid of the mice — especially when the mice sneak in inside the bedding."

"Afraid of eating meal surrounded by bugs."

"Afraid of someone appearing when walking in a dark road."

"Afraid of being fat."

Some of these replies, not even a smart person could imagine it, making people wince, not knowing whether to laugh or cry.

But a girl would never reply like this:

"Afraid to die."

The room became hotter and hotter, more and more stuffy.

Tian SiSi suddenly had the urge to have a bowl of husked lotus iced drink.

As soon as she felt the urge, she could no longer feel comfortable. As if she would go crazy at any moment.

Luckily, at this moment she suddenly heard a very strange sound.

The sound was coming from underneath.

She had not guessed what that sound was when she suddenly saw a block of stone being lifted up.

She immediately jumped back into the corner.

From that big hole, a person extended slowly his head.

Qin Ge!

Tian SiSi was so pleasantly surprised, she immediately called his name.

Qin Ge saw her with surprise and then bended down to examine that monk, as he also blurted out, "Did you really knock open his head?"

Tian SiSi also called out, "I want to ask you, even if you knock open his head, there is no need to take his life as well."

Qin Ge said, "Why should you think I am the one who broke his head? I don't know anything about it."

Tian SiSi said, "If you do not know, who knows then?"

Qin Ge said, "You! Aren't you in this room with him all the time?"

Tian SiSi retorted back, "Who was with him all the time, didn't you fall down after him at that same place?"

Qin Ge said, "But after I fell down, I did not even see a shadow."

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, "What did you see?"

Qin Ge said, "I did not see anything, even if there was something, I still could not see it."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because there was no light at all, the place was as dark as the night, even if I were a bat, I probably still could not see a thing."

Tian SiSi said, "How did you come here?"

Qin Ge said, "Because there were some stone steps under my feet. After trying for half a day, I finally managed to follow the path to this place. When I stepped on the stone stairs, immediately the block of stone opened. I thought it was you who were rescuing me from above."

Tian SiSi gave a forced smile and said, "I am not that good."

Qin Ge said, "Then how did you get here? This monk"

Tian SiSi had interrupted him, "Do not make a blind judgement, when I came here, he was already like this."

Qin Ge frowned, "Who had killed him?"

Tian SiSi said, "Only the ghost knows."

Hearing about "the ghost", Qin Ge's face also changed color, "It looks like this place is really fishy, I am wondering why do you continue to stay here?"

Tian SiSi said, "You think I did not want to leave?"

Qin Ge said, "I thought you were waiting for me."

Tian SiSi's face blushed a little and said, "How would I know that you would spring up here."

Qin Ge said, "Since you were not waiting for me, why didn't you leave?"

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "Because I could not get away."

Qin Ge said, "Why?"

Tian SiSi said, "Upon entering this room, the door closed from outside."

Qin Ge lost his temper and said, "Who closed the door?"

Tian SiSi said, "Only the ghost knows."

When she spoke about "the ghost", her complexion seemed to change – although she might not be afraid of death, ghosts could be really fearful.

Qin Ge said, "YouYou cannot push open this leafed door?"

Tian SiSi said, "It was locked from outside, how could I push it open?"

Qin Ge said, "Perhaps you did not try hard enough."

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and said, "You think I am really that useless? Why don't you try it yourself!"

Qin Ge must certainly try it himself!

As soon as he just pushed gently, the door opened.

Tian SiSi nearly could not believe her own eyes. After standing stunned for half a day, she could not bear screaming, "This leafed door was obviously locked from outside a moment ago, I am sure."

The door was already opened, she could now get out, so she should be very happy. Instead she felt so angry. Like she was being treated unjustly. Lady Tian would rather die than being treated unjustly.

Qin Ge sighed and said, "This leafed door was locked from outside a moment ago, but now we can go!"

Lady Tian said, "I will not leave."

Qin Ge was stunned and said, "Why won't you leave?"

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "You treated me unjustly, you thought I had deceived you."

Qin Ge blinked and said, "Who said you had deceived me? Why did you want to deceive me?"

Tian SiSi said, "Although you said so, but in your heart you are thinking that I have deceived you."

Qin Ge smiled, "I had not thought that you had deceived me, never cross my mind."

Tian SiSi said, "But this leafed door"

Qin Ge said, "This leafed door was certainly locked from outside a moment ago, since that suspicious party could lock it, of course he could unlock it too."

Finally, Tian SiSi had revealed a smile, but she frowned again, "But who is that person? Why did he do this stealthy matters?"

Qin Ge said, "When we find him, we can certainly ask him that."

Tian SiSi said, "Right, we must certainly find that person, we certainly must find him to clarify this."

This time, she did not wait for Qin Ge and had rushed outside.

The room outside was much cooler.

The three cups of tea were still on the table, had not been touched.

But they had certainly cooled down.

Tian SiSi certainly felt she needed to drink iced cold tea.

If it had been several days ago, she would have no hesitation to drink this tea, but she finally had become more cautious, and wondered if the tea had been poisoned.

She could not see whether or not the tea was poisoned, but a world-wise person should always be more cautious.

Qin Ge was precisely a world-wise person.

She wanted to call Qin Ge to have a look, but then she noticed that Qin Ge were just standing there staring blankly ahead.

Tian SiSi said, "Hey, why are you just standing there, what are you thinking?"

Qin Ge was finally aware of her, looked at her and smiled suddenly, "I was thinking, if this leafed door really could not be opened, that would also be interesting."

Tian SiSi said, "Interesting, why?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "If the door really could not be opened, then we should be trapped inside, trapped together for a lifetime."

Tian SiSi's face reddened, blushing she said, "You are not a good thing."

Qin Ge said, "There are really men who are good things?"

Tian SiSi came up suddenly and said, "You know that I originally wanted to marry you?"

Qin Ge said, "Yes."

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "But even if we were trapped together in a house, trapped for a lifetime, I still definitely would not have married you."

Qin Ge said, "Why?"

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "Because although you are very good, but you are actually not the kind of person whom I want to marry."

Qin Ge blinked and said, "What kind of person do you want to marry?"

Tian SiSi was stunned for half a day before she said, "Wait until I find him, I will certainly tell you first."

Qin Ge sighed and said, "You say these things, aren't you afraid that I would feel bad listening to you?"

Tian SiSi said, "I know that you will not feel uncomfortable, because I am not the kind of woman you want to marry, too."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "Such being the case, it looks like we can only be good friends."

Tian SiSi sweetly said, "Good friends forever."

She suddenly felt at ease with herself because she had said what she wanted to say.

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Such being the case, I do not want to be trapped inside with you, so please leave first!"

Tian SiSi said, "Right, let us find that person."

She suddenly remembered that this door was also locked from outside just a moment ago, she could not open this door. But this time, she did not dare to let Qin Ge try it. This time, she tried it herself.

The door was really unlocked, it opened immediately when she pushed it gently.

as soon as she put out a hand to push gently opens.

"Since someone could lock this door, someone could also open it."

But as soon as she opened the door, she felt that this was not the most important thing, because she found out something more surprising.

When the door was opened, there were some strange noises outside.

What kind of noise?

The noise that she could not imagine she would hear in this place.

When the door opened a little, there were all kind of noises that were heard, at least 7 or 8 different kinds, the sound of card shoveled, the shouts to get the right number, the winning coins, the laughter, the sound of despair all mingled together.

This place was originally a gambling establishment, so this kind of noises were originally a perfectly justified matter.

But didn't the gambling establishment get erased a moment ago? Didn't this place changed into a temple of monks? Moreover, there was no furniture at all in this place just a moment ago, a vacant room, so where could these noises have come from?

Tian SiSi nearly could not stop herself from screaming, instead she pushed the door open wide.

But when the door was open, she really could not stop herself from screaming.

Who said that this place was a temple? Who said that this place was a vacant room?

This place was obviously a gambling establishment, brilliantly illuminated, all kinds of person were gambling jubilantly.

All kinds of people except monks.

None.

The gambling established miraculously disappeared a moment ago, and now it miraculously reappeared.

How could it be?

Who could explain this?

END OF CHAPTER 21

Chapter 22: Seemingly Real, Seemingly Imaginary

One

This gambling establishment was brilliantly illuminated, each gambling table was fully crammed. This was the gambling establishment's liveliest time. Every gambling establishment in the world was like this.

But when Tian SiSi saw this situation, she was ten times more startled than when she saw this room full of monks just a moment ago.

She was stunned for a very long time before she turned around.

Qin Ge stood behind her with open mouth, big staring eyes, and the face expression of someone who had just been kicked in the stomach.

Tian SiSi licked her dry lips and said, "What do you see?"

Qin Ge said, "Onecrowded gambling establishment."

Tian SiSi said, "You really see that?"

Qin Ge showed a forced smile and said, "Who knows whether it is real or not? Maybe only the ghost knows."

Tian SiSi wanted to speak further when she saw a person walked to them with a grin.

The person who put on a very elegant air carried a snuffbox. His stature was big, with heavy beard, when you saw how he walk, his wugong was not weak.

Tian SiSi did not wait for him to arrive, she first greeted him and said, "How long has this gambling establishment

opened?”

This person seemed to regard her question as strange, after looking at her several times he said with a smile, “This gambling establishment was opened for business maybe since you were still a child.”

Tian SiSi felt alarm in her heart and said with trepidation, “Ever since this gambling establishment was open for business, you have been here?”

This person said with a smile, “I welcomed the first visitor of this gambling establishment.”

Tian SiSi said, “You were here all the time?”

This person, “Except when I slept.”

Tian SiSi said, “This afternoon?”

This person, “I had planned on having a nap in the afternoon, but there were several friends coming today, so I was with them today.”

Tian SiSi clenched both of her fists and suddenly turned around, “YouYouDid you hear him?”

Qin Ge’s complexion had also turned white, saying sternly, “You better say the truth!”

This person’s complexion changed color and said, “Why wouldn’t I say the truth?”

Tian SiSi said, “Actually who are you?”

This person, “I am surnamed Jin (gold)”

Tian SiSi said, “Surnamed Jin? How are you related to the golden beard?”

This person traced his beard and said with a smile, “I am precisely the golden beard.”

Tian SiSi really could not bear this and screamed, “You are not the golden beard, no!”

This person appeared startled and said, “Who am I if I am not the golden beard?”

Tian SiSi said, “No matter who you are, you are not the golden beard!”

By this time, there were some people who had circled them.

Tian SiSi had not looked clearly who they were, she only saw grinning faces, ugly smiles, and strange feelings.

This person was also smiling and said suddenly, “How does the girl know that I am not the golden beard?”

Tian SiSi said, “Because I recognize the golden beard, he does not have any beard at all.”

This person suddenly laughed loudly and pointed at her, “This girl said that the golden beard does not have any beard. “

All the people surrounding them laughed loudly, as if they had just heard some good jokes.

“How can the golden beard not have any beard?”

“If he does not have any beard, how can he be called the golden beard?”

The laughter was coarse and grating.

Tian SiSi were so anxious that she felt she was going insane with rage very soon. Exhausting her whole body

strength, she called out loudly, “Not only the golden beard does not have any beard, but he has also become a monk.”

When she said this, everybody laughed aloud, laughed so hard that they had to bend their waists to gasp for breath. If the golden beard had become a monk, probably everybody had also become a monk.

“If this girl has not mistakenly identify a person, maybe she must have suffered a heat-stroke that caused her head to be dizzy!”

Tian SiSi jumped and said, “I am not confused nor have I made a mistake, I saw that with my own eyes.”

That person with a beard said with a smile, “What did you see?”

Tian SiSi said, “I saw the golden beard became a monk.”

Someone said, “Why did he want to become a monk?”

Tian SiSi said, “Because someone compelled him.”

The person with a beard said, “Who was compelling him?”

Tian SiSi said, “.....A monk.”

The laughter grew louder and louder, this grating sound caused her headache to grow too. The strange matters that she encountered today seemed to be a bunch of lies too, that she could no longer distinguish clearly.

Suddenly someone said, “You were saying a monk?”

This voice was slow and calm. It was loud but not yelled, even among the boisterous laughters everyone could hear his words clearly, like he was speaking directly to their ears.

Even a simple person could see that this person surely had strong internal cultivation.

The people surrounding them immediately dispersed very quickly as if they had prior agreement. Then they could see that the speaker was unexpectedly also a monk.

Two

This monk was withered, diminutive, emaciated, looking like he had just recovered from a major illness, he was almost shorter than other people by a head.

But whoever saw him would not have shown even the slightest contempt of him.

This was not because his eyes were particularly sharp, nor because of two dignified, calm middle-aged monks standing behind him. Also not because these monks were wearing very magnificent and expensive robes, or that the string of rosary in his hand was dazzling with golden light.

Not for any particular reason, whoever had seen him would give him respect.

Tian SiSi was not an exception.

Although she had not met this monk, nor did she know who this monk was, but she felt that he must surely be an eminent enlightened monk.

An eminent monk was like a famous writer, you paid attention to him wherever you were.

What was strange was that nobody saw them a moment ago, this room did not have any monk before. Nobody saw where they had come from.

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "You were asking me a moment ago?"

The senior monk nodded and said, "Female benefactor has mentioned about a monk a moment ago?"

Tian SiSi said, "Yes."

The senior monk said, "What type of monk was that?"

Tian SiSi hesitatingly said, "That monk had a round face, maybe with a dimple."

The senior monk said, "He was old?"

Tian SiSi said, "Not very old, but he looked very important."

The senior monk said, "A taoist priest was also with him?"

Tian SiSi said, "Not only a taoist priest, but also a scholar."

The senior monk said, "Where are they now?"

Tian SiSi said, "I have not seen the scholar and the taoist priest, but that monk"

She gave a long sigh and then said, "That monk has died!"

That senior monk did not show any change in his expression, but suddenly "crack", the chair he was sitting unexpectedly disintegrated!

This senior monk actually still showed the same sitting posture without moving.

Everyone gulped secretly, no one dared to laugh.

After a very long time, this senior monk slowly said, "Where did he die?"

Tian SiSi pointed toward the leafed door behind her.

As quickly as her finger pointed it out, the two middle-aged monks behind the senior monk had rushed across quickly. With a whooshing sound, the clothes of many people were blown away, some hats actually flew away.

Tian SiSi stole a secret look at Qin Ge.

Qin Ge's complexion was also very serious, the red silk handkerchief seemed to be drenched in sweat.

That two middle-aged monks walked in from the door while carrying that monk's corpse.

Although they tried to stay calm, but their faces were filled with anger.

The senior monk only took a look once, dangled his head, put both palms together, and chanted a low voice of prayer. When the eyes opened again, Tian SiSi suddenly felt as if they flashed outward with piercing glances.

The senior monk suddenly arrived in front of her, and said, "What is the female benefactor's name?"

Tian SiSi gently coughed twice and said, "I am surnamed Tian, called Tian SiSi."

The senior monk calmly looked over her before shifting his vision at Qin Ge and said, "This benefactor?"

Qin Ge said, "The lowly one is Qin Ge."

The senior monk said, "Qin for dynasty? Ge for that generous sorrowful song?"

Qin Ge said, "Precisely."

The senior monk nodded gently, suddenly his blue veins stuck out on his sickly face.

But his voice was very calm as he said, “Good, good wugong, fine skills, you really live up to your reputation.”

Tian SiSi could not bear calling out, “He did not kill this monk, you must not make that mistake.”

The senior monk said, “If he did not commit murder, would it be you?”

Tian SiSi said, “How could it be me, when I went in, he had already died.”

The senior monk said, “Going in where?”

Tian SiSi said, “Inside that room.”

The senior monk said, “At that time benefactor Qin was already in room?”

Tian SiSi said, “When I went in, he was not there. He went in later.”

That bearded man suddenly said, “That is my private room, there is no other way of entry, how did Hero Qin went inside since none of us knew?”

Tian SiSi said, “He did not go in from here.”

The senior monk said, “This benefactor just said a moment ago that the room had no other entrance.”

Tian SiSi said, “HeHe was underground.”

She felt that people would not believe this answer, therefore she immediately explained, “This afternoon when we came, this monk had not died, but while speaking with us, he suddenly fell into a tunnel below.”

The senior monk said, “Then?”

Tian SiSi said, "Later Qin Ge had fallen as well. There was no one else in this room, all the monks had left, therefore I went in to find them, only to find that this monk had died inside. But when I went to get back outside, this door had been locked from outside."

She spoke in one breath quickly, only to find these other people were staring with big eyes at her.

Everyone seemed to be unable to smile.

Only that senior monk did not show any mirth and said with a lower voice, "Miss came here this afternoon?"

Tian SiSi said, "At that time it was just about noon, maybe one and a half hour ago."

The senior monk said, "There were people in this room?"

Tian SiSi said, "Right."

The senior monk said, "These people?"

Tian SiSi said, "No. It was a houseful of monks, including the golden beard."

That bearded man could not bear to smile and interrupted, "I am never a monk, everybody here can attest to that."

The senior monk said, "Can anyone provide the proof for Miss? That houseful of monks?"

Tian SiSi said, "AllAll had left."

The senior monk said, "Gone where?"

Tian SiSi said, "I do not know."

The senior monk said, "After they left, was there anyone here?"

Tian SiSi said, "No, no one!"

Before saying this, she found that some people were smiling secretly.

After saying this, some people was smiling and laughing.

The senior monk's vision flashed, looking around he said, "Where were you all this afternoon?"

Several dozens of people cried together, "Here!"

The senior monk said, "When did you come?"

Some people said, "In the afternoon."

Also someone said, "Yesterday evening."

The senior monk said, "Did anyone leave?"

Everybody said, "No one, absolutely no one did."

When the gamblers were betting happily, even if you were using the whip to chase him away, you still would not be able to get him to leave.

Tian SiSi was so mad she felt she would go crazy, she screamed, "They are talking nonsense! There was no one here this afternoon— these persons were not here."

The senior monk looked at her coldly and said, "There are 70-80 benefactors here, and they are all talking nonsense, only you have not talked nonsense."

Tian SiSi said, "Why do I want to talk nonsense?"

The senior monk said, "Do you know the monk who is dead?"

Tian SiSi said, "I do not know."

The senior monk's eyes were filled with grief and indignation and said, "His religious name is Wu Ming (nameless), he is my younger brother."

That bearded man suddenly blurted out, "Is it possible that he is the hero monk, meddlesome monk, Shao Lin's Master Wu Ming?"

The senior monk nodded, "Since he is a monk, why also be a hero? Since nameless, why also be meddlesome? If he does not enter hell, who will enter it?"

The heavily bearded man changed countenance and said, "Then, master you"

The senior monk said, "I am Master Wu Se, from Shao Lin."

When he said his name, suddenly nobody spoke or smiled.

Any people in jiang-hu knew the names of Shaolin Temple's two protectors.

Tian SiSi was getting very angry, was flying into rage just now. But at present, she could not help but stay quiet.

Because she suddenly felt an ice-cold chill in the air, as if she was engulfed in freezing water which were turning into ice.

Whether this place was a gambling establishment or a temple was fine. Whether that person was the golden beard or not was also fine. It was not a big problem.

But if someone had killed a Shaolin Temple's disciple, had killed the famous hero monk in jiang-hu, that was a totally different proposition.

At that moment, Tian SiSi suddenly realized that this strange matter was a carefully well-laid evil plot. This plot was not only fearful, it could yield really awful conclusion.

She was thrust into this obviously awful plot with Qin Ge, it would not be easy to extract themselves out of this mess.

She now truly understood how fearful it was to be treated unjustly by other people.

Everyone was all starting at her, their glances were completely different from a moment ago.

A moment ago, everyone was treating her as a girl who acted and lied like a madman, that was humorous. But presently, they were looking at her like she was a dead person.

“Why did I want to lie?”

“You must certainly have lied, because you could not admit guilt to the killing of Master Wu Ming.”

Tian SiSi said in a trembling voice, “I have no hatred or enmity with you all. Why do you keep accusing me?”

The heavily bearded man cast a cold sidelong glance at her, slowly receding from her. Other people also went backward, as if she were the plague, they could not afford to be stained by her.

Tian SiSi rushed forward and seized a person’s front clothes and said, “I know that you are an honest and good person, why don't you tell them, that you were simply not here this afternoon, that no one was here at that time!”

All of her life she had never asked anything from anyone, but in this moment she had entreated earnestly.

Although this person’s face had turned white, he actually stuck to what he said and coldly said, “If I were not here this

afternoon, how could I have lost 500 taels?"

Tian SiSi's eyes became clearly red, she could not resist slapping his face.

This person traced his face, but did not show anger or retaliation.

Nobody could retaliate against a dead person.

That senior monk might have become enlivened at that time, but instead he closed his eyes and chanted the prayer for Master Wu Ming.

He certainly did not need to worry.

These two persons could not escape anywhere.

Tian SiSi ran to him and said loudly, "Fine, let me ask you one thing then, if I have no enmity with him, I do not even know his name, why should I kill him?"

Master Wu Se was silent for a very long time and said slowly, "It is said that he had entered Shan Liu (mountain flow)."

Shan Liu?

Tian SiSi said, "If he had entered Shan Liu, therefore I must have killed him?"

Master Wu Se sighed, "People who wanted to kill him are not just you, as soon as one enters Shan Liu, that is no different than giving up himself into hell."

Tian SiSi jumped and said loudly, "There goes your imagination, I do not even know what Shan Lu is all about."

Master Wu Se sank his face and said, "In front of old monk, nobody dares to be so impolite."

Tian SiSi said, "It is you who is unreasonable, not me. If I had wanted to kill him, I still would not have had the capability."

Qin Ge had just stood there like a statue, but at this moment he heaved a heavy sigh and suddenly said, "It is useless."

Tian SiSi said, "What is useless?"

Qin Ge said, "Whatever you say is useless."

Tian SiSi said, "But I"

Qin Ge said, "Although you do not have the capability to kill him, I have."

Tian SiSi said, "But you have not killed him."

Qin Ge said, "Besides you, who can prove that I have not killed him?"

Tian SiSi was stunned.

Qin Ge laughed wildly suddenly and said, "I have about 500 knife cuts big and small, why should I care about this additional stab in the back."

Master Wu Se lowered his voice, "The old monk has long heard that benefactor Qin is a dauntless man"

Qin Ge laughed, "Right, the real man should show why he is a real man, if you insist that I must have killed him, why not act as if I had killed him."

Master Wu Se said, "Good, such being the case, I am asking the benefactor to return to Shao Lin with me."

Qin Ge said, "If we are going, let us go, to Shaolin Temple no matter how difficult and dangerous is the situation, I am surnamed Qin will also go with you."

Tian SiSi held back his sleeves and said, "YouWhy should you return to Shaolin Temple with him?"

Qin Ge smiled, "To do what they want."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, "They want your life."

Qin Ge said, "They can pluck my life."

Tian SiSi said, "You should not give up your life so easily, why should you yield to the person in this unclear manner?"

That dignified middle age monk suddenly injected, "Miss must not forget, revenge for a murdered person is not only a natural justice, it is also the law of the land."

Tian SiSi said, "Have you forgotten that you are a Buddhist, how can you keep on proclaiming anger and revenge, in Buddhism a person should not take someone's life recklessly, haven't your master taught you this?"

The middle-aged monk coldly said, "Miss, you have formidable tongue."

Tian SiSi said, "This strange monk's eyes are too flawed, they cannot distinguish clearly between the good person and dishonest people."

The middle-aged monk lowered his face and said sternly, "Although the Buddhist's tongue is flawed, but"

Master Wu Se roared suddenly, "Stop talking! You have led a pious life of many years, how can you still enter into a

useless argument?”

The middle-aged monk put together his palms, bowed and said, “The disciple admits guilt.”

By now, everyone had drawn two conclusions.

Shaolin Temple’s discipline was really stern, but it would not tolerate anybody committing crime against them.

Qin Ge was really a dauntless man.

But how would this matter be concluded? Nobody knew.

Master Wu Se lowered his voice, “Because the old monk does not want to take life recklessly like in the buddhist commandment, therefore this time I must bring back benefactor Qin.”

Tian SiSi said, “What will you do after bringing him back?”

Master Wu Se said, “To present him to the legal official trial.”

Tian SiSi said, “He is not a Shao Lin’s disciple, how can you punish him by legal official trial?”

Master Wu Se said, “The disciple is murdered, this authorizes the use of the legal official trial.”

Tian SiSi said, “Who saw him murder your Shaolin Temple monk?”

Master Wu Se said, “The fact is very clear, why should we need a personal witness.”

Tian SiSi coldly said, “What is called the clear fact? Did someone see him murder the meddlesome monk, who could prove that he was the instigator?”

Master Wu Se said, "Only both of you have the time and the opportunity."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Master Wu Se said, "At that time only both of you were with him."

Tian SiSi said, "Where were you at that time?"

Master Wu Se said, "I was on the way."

Tian SiSi said, "Since you were on the way, how would you know what happened here? How did you know that no one else had gone in into that room?"

Master Wu Se's face showed anger and said, "How can Miss quibble about this?"

Tian SiSi coldly said, "It is the senior monk who quibbles, not me."

Master Wu Se scolded, "You have a very sharp tongue, little woman. My arguments are not as good, but I can still conquer the evil."

He seemed to have forgotten the words he said to his apprentice a moment ago.

That middle-aged monk casts down his eyes, not even daring to look toward him.

Tian SiSi sneered, "So only the senior monk can act rashly and become angry, the lesser monk cannot"

Master Wu Se said sternly, "Stop talking! If some people dare again to be unreasonable, do not blame the old monk if he becomes heartless."

Tian SiSi said, "You want to resort to violence? Good!"

She turned around to pat Qin Ge's shoulder and said, "He wants to resort to violence, you have heard him?"

Qin Ge said, "Yes."

Tian SiSi said, "Are you afraid?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "I can only fight originally, I cannot debate."

Tian SiSi clapped and said with a smile, "This is right, a dauntless man would rather have his head broken rather than being treated unjustly, otherwise he cannot be called a dauntless man, he can only be called the bean curd."

Qin Ge said, "I am listening to you."

Qin Ge had not finished the words before he attacked. He hit the face of that middle-aged monk on the left. He attacked very quickly, but that middle-aged monk was actually not a weak one, he lowered his body like sitting on a horse, raised his left hand to block and then swung an upper-cut with his right fist.

Shaolin Temple became the world-famous place for the fist styles, this style was precisely the essence of Shao Lin's "fu-hou-luo-han-quan (crouching tiger Luo Han fists)".

Who knew that Qin Ge would not evade or dodge this fist and met this tough fist head-on.

"Thud", that middle-aged monk's fist had hit his stomach.

People watching this called out in alarm, as they were in dismay that such a bright powerful person like Qin Ge could be hit so easily by that person.

Although some people called out in alarm, the person under the attack never made any noise.

When that middle-aged monk hit with his fists on his stomach, it was as if he had hit a big stone, he was just

stunned

Master Wu Se yelled, "Careful."

Even before that yell this middle-aged monk's fist was already covered by Qin Ge.

Then, Qin Ge's fist had also landed on his stomach.

This middle-aged monk did not suffer this as well as Qin Ge, he staggered backward, both of his hands covered his stomach, sweat beads as large as soybeans flowed down his face as he could no longer stand up straight.

Tian SiSi relaxed at last and said with a smile, "What did you use that time?"

Qin Ge said, "This is called letting oneself be attacked."

Tian SiSi said, "Letting oneself be attacked is also a skill?"

Qin Ge said, "You may not understand this, but you should not learn how to hit a person first, instead you should learn how to be attacked, that way I can suffer not only the fist attacks but also the knife stabs."

He indeed had been stabbed, no one could deny that. He had endured 472 knife stabs at least.

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "Right, you hit him with a fist, he has also hit you with a fist, both sides did not get any advantage, but it is only a pity that he did not come up as well as you under the attack."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "You have finally understood this truth."

Master Wu Se with a pale face had walked slowly forward, he sneered, "Good, the old monk wants to see how much

you can suffer.”

Qin Ge replied, “You also want to try?”

Master Wu Se said, “Please!”

Qin Ge said, “Good!”

His fist went into attack immediately, with the same style as in a moment ago.

Master Wu Se lowered his body as if sitting on a horse, the left hand went up to block, the right hand made the counter-attack.

This move was entirely alike to the one used by the middle-aged monk a moment ago.

But when the expert showed his hand, the quality of the goods looked entirely different.

Although Master Wu Se's stature and fist were all much smaller than the middle-aged monk, but this heavenly feet movement and strong embodiment, was strong enough to blast even a big chunk of wood into a pulp.

Who knew that unexpectedly Qin Ge decided not to be attacked this time.

He leapt up high over the head of Master Wu Se gently and swiftly, and pointed a couple of finger like a sword at the accupoint of Master Wu Se's head “the protrusion of the occipital bone accupoint”.

Not only this move was steep and superb, the way he attacked was also very quick and quite different from the style he used a moment ago.

Master Wu Se gave a low exclamation, “Good!”

As he exclaimed, he laid back his body and with a “ding dong” sound, the iron rosary had swung into Qin Ge.

Immediately Qin Ge's legs kicked backward and his body suddenly slid sideways three feet, and using a person's shoulder had flown again into the sky.

Who knew that Master Wu Se's iron rosary had also followed him, swirling menacingly like the wind of a golden sabre.

Even if Qin Ge could fly quickly, he would still be slower than the wind of the flying iron rosary. Even if he could really suffer the stings of this iron rosary on his body - wherever it hit him on the body would not feel any good.

Tian SiSi had called out in alarm, but who knew that at this moment, suddenly "crack" the roof had opened up a big hole. A hand had extended from the hole and grabbed suddenly that string of rosary.

Master Wu Se shouted angrily, "Who is it?"

Someone on the roof said with a smile, "A person who must knock on the monk's head, in particular a meddlesome monk."

Tian SiSi called out loudly, "Do not let him leave, perhaps he is the killer of Master Wu Ming."

She really did not need to call out, because immediately Master Wu Se shed his robe and soared with "a solitary crane to the heaven" move, with hands extended like pulling up the onions, he had flown like a crane to the big hole on the roof.

In that same instant, several cold stars flew in from the roof, "ding! dang! dong!" A succession of menacing sounds ensued and all the lights in the room had been extinguished.

In the darkness the crowd grew loud and confused.

Tian SiSi luckily had already estimated where Qin Ge would land, she ran over immediately and said in a low voice, "Where are you?"

A hand extended and gripped her hand.

Tian SiSi said, "We should not wait for them to settle this muddled accusation, let us leave."

Qin Ge said, "If we leave now, wouldn't it be like admitting to the murder?"

Tian SiSi said, "If you do not leave, others will still accuse you of murder."

Qin Ge sighed and said, "Fine, let us go."

The door was open.

Outside the door the stars lighted up the sky.

Tian SiSi pulled Qin Ge to run, suddenly someone ahead of them blocked the entrance, his hand held a sharp sabre, this heavily bearded face shouted out, "These two people wanted to escape, block them quickly!"

While shouting, his sabre moved toward Qin Ge.

Qin Ge sneered and quickly ran to him, welcoming the swinging sabre.

If anything, he did not fear the sabre.

No matter how quick was the sabre.

Instead that person was completely flustered, the sabre had not chopped down, this sabre in his hand had been deprived of by Qin Ge.

END OF CHAPTER 22

Chapter 23: Masters

One

Immediately only the sabre's flash was seen.

The bright sabre flashed forward toward that heavily bearded man's face.

The heavily bearded man could only feel that his face was cool, as afraid as he was he could not help putting out his hand to trace his face, the chin was already smoothly shaven.

Goodbye to the black silk things dancing in the air at present, which was originally his beard.

Very quick sabre, very wonderful sabre.

The heavily bearded man leg's went soft all of a sudden and he dropped down to the ground.

Tian SiSi's laughter was heard outside the door saying, "Didn't I say that the golden beard actually did not have any beard? Right?"

Qin Ge laughed and said, "He did not have any beard at all."

Two

Now there was finally no question about the beard's existence.

But what about the monk?

Actually who killed the monk?

Was it the person that extended his hand from the roof?

If he had killed the monk, why did he have to rescue Qin Ge?

Who was he?

It looked like these questions would not be solved very quickly nor very easily.

Star lights all over the sky.

Tian SiSi stopped, gasping for breath.

Here they finally could no longer see the monk or the bearded person.

Tian SiSi looked at Qin Ge's face and said with a smile, "You have not kept the beard luckily, your luck is really good."

Qin Ge gave a forced smile, "My luck is also good?"

Tian SiSi said, "If you have kept the beard, I will extract them one by one down to their roots."

She frowned suddenly and said, "Did you recognize that bearded person?"

Qin Ge said, "Not only have I not recognize him, I have never seen him before in my life."

Tian SiSi said, "I have never seen him either, the people I have seen before, probably at the most only have half of his beard."

Qin Ge looked at the sabre in his hand and said with a smile, "This is luckily a very quick sabre, otherwise it was really not easy to shave all of his beard."

Tian SiSi had also smiled and said, "I did not expect your sabre skill to be that good."

Qin Ge said, "If a person had suffered 472 sabre cuts, his sabre skill should not be too bad."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "But that senior monk was really so formidable, his skin was wrinkled like a monkey, but he was unexpectedly so difficult to cope with."

Qin Ge said, "In Shaolin Temple, there are several thousand monks that are none so easy to cope with, moreover among these thousand monks, he was the most difficult to cope with."

Tian SiSi said, "He is really the Shao Lin's number one master?"

Qin Ge said, "If not the number one, he is not far from it."

Tian SiSi sighed, "No wonder you were not his match."

Qin Ge stared, "Who said I was not his match?"

Tian SiSi curled her lips and said, "If it had not been for someone who had rescued you, you would have been already"

Qin Ge said sharply, "That did not count."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because he had his weapon, I was actually empty-handed, I was already at a disadvantaged position."

Tian SiSi said, "He was just using his string of rosary."

Qin Ge said, "That rosary is his weapon, when a Buddhist monk walk outside, he would feel embarrassed carrying a sword around. Especially with his status, he could only take this kind of weapon with him."

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "If he had been also empty-handed? Could you have defeated him?"

Qin Ge smiled and said, "At least I would not have been defeated."

Tian SiSi said, "Shao Lin Pai has been the fundamental school in the martial arts world for several hundred years, and no other school has the same kind of reputation. Since your wugong is at the same level as the Shao Lin's number one master, wouldn't your skill be already unmatched in this world?"

Qin Ge said, "Heh heh! Ha ha!"

Tian SiSi said, "What is the meaning of heh heh ha ha?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Meaning, I am not unmatched in the world."

Tian SiSi had also smiled and said, "Finally you are very honest."

Qin Ge sighed, "A chivalrous person has no alternative but to be honest."

Tian SiSi said, "According to you, there are several people in the world whose wugong is higher than you?"

Qin Ge thought and said, "Not too many."

Tian SiSi said, "What do you mean?"

Qin Ge said, "There are not that many people."

Tian SiSi said, "Actually there are several?"

Qin Ge thought and said, "I heard that in the East Sea's Bi Luo Dao (blue spiral island), the city leader of Ruo Cui Cheng (light green jade city), has quick sword moves, unparalleled in the world."

Tian SiSi said, "Is he the first under heaven?"

Qin Ge said, "No."

Tian SiSi said, "Who is the first under heaven then?"

Qin Ge said, "Little Li's flying dagger."

Saying these four words, his face showed all the respect and admiration of him.

Anyone who mentioned "Little Li's flying dagger" had no alternative but to admire him.

Anyone who did not admire him already had their last words.

Tian SiSi was also unable to restrain her admiration and said, "Are you saying Li XunHoan, Little Li Tanhua?"

Qin Ge sighed, "Who else?"

Tian SiSi asked, "I heard that he had live secluded for a long time already, is he still in this world?"

Qin Ge said, "Certainly, this kind of person will live forever."

He said it correctly.

A person could live forever, because their lives had been planted in the people's hearts forever.

Tian SiSi said, "Let us not consider the people who have lived secluded, but only the people who are still active in jiang-hu."

Qin Ge said, "That would not be that many."

He thought and then said, "Shao Lin's leader Master Wu Gen has deep internal cultivation, nobody knows how deep."

Tian SiSi said, "You have fought with him?"

Qin Ge said, "No, I do not dare to."

Tian SiSi sweetly said, "Fine, he is one."

Qin Ge said, "There are also Wudang's Taoist Fei, Bashan's swordsman Taoist Gu, Da-mo-shen-long (the desert's divine dragon)I don't want to fight with them."

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "Only them?"

Qin Ge said, "In addition, at least one more."

Tian SiSi said, "Who?"

Qin Ge said, "The person who rescued me a moment ago."

Tian SiSi said, "You have not even seen that person, how should you know how high is his wugong?"

Qin Ge said, "When he was on the roof, he could extend his hand through the roof and caught Wu Se's rosary just at the right time, I cannot do that."

Tian SiSi also had no alternative but to acknowledge, "That was really great."

Qin Ge said, "One more thing."

Tian SiSi said, "Extinguishing the lights?"

Qin Ge said, "Right, such hidden weapon expertise was really excellent."

Tian SiSi said, "You think he is the murderer of Wu Ming?"

Qin Ge said, "I only know that I did not kill that monk."

Tian SiSi said, "These people have no hatred nor enmity with us, we have never seen them before, why should they treat us unjustly like that?"

Qin Ge coldly said, "Perhaps they just want to divert the blame onto others."

Tian SiSi frowned and said, "Diverting the blame onto others?"

Qin Ge said, "You don't get that?"

Tian SiSi said, "I certainly do, you are saying that they wanted Master Wu Ming dead, but they were afraid that Shao Lin Pai would take revenge, therefore they had devised this method to divert the blame to you."

Qin Ge said, "Exactly."

Tian SiSi said, "'But who are they? Why did they want Master Wu Ming dead?"

Qin Ge said, "Do you know the meaning of Shao Lin Pai?"

Tian SiSi said, "I know!"

She should know.

For several hundred years, the three words "Shao Lin faction" had embedded into people's minds as the true fundamental faction of martial arts world.

Therefore, unless you were not normal, nobody would be willing to affront them.

Qin Ge said, "Do you know the status of Master Wu Ming in Shaolin Temple?"

Tian SiSi said, "His status cannot be a low one."

Qin Ge sighed and said, "Not low?"

Tian SiSi said, "I heard besides the abbot leader, who hold the highest status in Shaolin Temple, there are also the two law protectors."

Qin Ge said, "Strictly speaking, there are not just two law protectors, but four."

Tian SiSi said, "Actually is it two or four?"

Qin Ge said, "The most correct view is two big protectors and two small ones."

Tian SiSi had smiled and said, "I did not expect that monks are just like officials, they are divided into many social classes."

Qin Ge said, "But people should have different social classes."

Tian SiSi said, "But I thought that everyone should all be equal, otherwise it is unfair."

Qin Ge said, "Fine, let me ask you, if a person is stupid or lazy, who does nothing except eat during the day and sleep at night, what will he turn out to be?"

Tian SiSi said, "A beggar."

Qin Ge said, "Also if another person, diligent and thrifty, also intelligent, who is willing to progress, will he beg for food?"

Tian SiSi said, "Certainly not."

Qin Ge said, "Why do some people beg for food then? Or that some people live very comfortably?"

Tian SiSi said, "Because some people are stupid, some people are intelligent, diligent, some people are lazy."

Qin Ge said, "Is this very fair?"

Tian SiSi felt relaxed and said, "Very fair."

Qin Ge said, "So, should people have different social classes?"

Tian SiSi said, "Yes."

Qin Ge said, "When all people are standing at one place, they are all equal. Then, it depends on whether you are willing to crawl upward or you just stand there coolly enjoying the wind. Whether some people crawl and sweat profusely or just waiting there, that would bring inequality, if that is called unfair, then the truth is unfair."

He then slowly said, "If all the people can understand this truth, there will be less hatred and pain in the world."

Tian SiSi was staring at him, sighed gently, "I am suddenly discovering that the way you speak feels more and more like someone I know."

Qin Ge said, "Who?"

Tian SiSi shook her head, sighed and said, "You do not know him, he"

She bit her lips, not saying anything except to herself, "Where has that big-headed ghost disappeared? Will I be able to see him again?"

Qin Ge suddenly said, "Where were we a moment ago?"

Tian SiSi reddened and said with a smile, "We were discussing the two big and two small of Shaolin Temple's law protectors."

Qin Ge said, "Two big law protectors means that these two people are older, with very profound skills, therefore unless there was an emergency, they would not tackle the matters in the world."

Tian SiSi said, "Two small law protectors?"

Qin Ge said, "These two law protectors are not so old but they are already mature, they are really the Shaolin Temple's real stewards. Therefore these two people are not only extremely astute, their wugong skills are certainly also very high."

Tian SiSi said, "That means the two small law protectors are actually not small at all."

Qin Ge nodded and said, "That monk Wu Ming was originally one of the Shaolin Temple's law protectors, he was also the current abbot leader's younger fellow."

Tian SiSi said, "He did not seem to have such a decorated background."

Qin Ge said, "For several hundred years, there is only one kind of people who dares to kill Shao Lin's law protectors."

Tian SiSi said, "What kind of people?"

Qin Ge said, "Insane ones."

Tian SiSi laughed inevitably, "Do you think these people were all insane?"

Qin Ge said, "There two kinds of insane people actually."

Tian SiSi said, "What two kinds?"

Qin Ge said, "One kind is the one that has gone crazy because of himself, the other kind is the one that has gone

crazy because he was compelled by others.”

Tian SiSi’s eyes rotated and said, “You think that they have been compelled to insanity by Wu Ming.”

Qin Ge said, “Certainly.”

Tian SiSi said, “Why did the monk Wu Ming have to compel them?”

Qin Ge said, “Because this monk liked to be meddlesome.”

Tian SiSi said, “Since he was the Shaolin Temple's law protector, why did he have to be meddlesome?”

END OF CHAPTER 23

Chapter 24: Who are the Masters

One

Qin Ge said, "I only said that he was originally the Shaolin Temple's law protector."

Tian SiSi said, "Originally, but not now?"

Qin Ge said, "Not since 6-7 years ago."

Tian SiSi said, "Was he forced to resign?"

Qin Ge said, "No, he just resigned."

Tian SiSi said, "After climbing up with great difficulty to reach that high status, why did he have to leave?"

Qin Ge said, "Because Shaolin Temple was too cold, whereas his heart was actually too hot."

Tian SiSi said, "The Buddhist cannot be too warm-hearted?"

Qin Ge said, "Therefore he would rather go to hell."

Tian SiSi also sighed and said, "I only understand now what that meant."

Qin Ge said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "A person that goes to hell is not being forced by others, he goes willingly there to save other people."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "You can understand that, you have already grown up a lot."

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and said, “I am already a grown-up.”

Qin Ge said, “You were originally a young lady, but now you are a grown-up.”

Tian SiSi had not said anything else.

Because she had realized that after these days, she had really grown up a lot— at least several years older.

She understood the difference between “a young lady” and “a grown-up”.

This was something that a young lady would have never understood.

After a very long time, she also asked suddenly, “That monk said something really strange a moment ago, did you understand him?”

Qin Ge said, “The senior monk said many strange things, 7-8 out of 10 were strange.”

Tian SiSi said, “But this was something really different.”

Qin Ge said, “Which sentence?”

Tian SiSi said, “It was actually just two words.”

Qin Ge said, “Two words?”

Tian SiSi said, “Shan Liu.”

As soon as he heard these two words, Qin Ge’s expression really became a little different.

Tian SiSi said, “That senior monk said the monk Wu Mink should go to hell, because he entered Shan Liu, did you hear that?”

Qin Ge nodded.

Tian SiSi said, "What is the meaning of Shan Liu?"

Qin Ge was silent for a very long time and then slowly said, "Shan Liu is a group of people."

Tian SiSi said, "A group of people?"

Qin Ge said, "A group of friends, their interest is the same, therefore they unify together, these two words make up for their code name 'Shan Liu.'"

Tian SiSi said, "What is their interest?"

Qin Ge said, "Going to hell."

Tian SiSi, "They don't want people to go to hell?"

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "So to them, the gambling establishment is like hell, they must rescue these people who were perishing inside, therefore they must alter the gambling establishment into a temple?"

Qin Ge said, "At least the temple is not hell, it does not have burning places to burn the dead people."

Tian SiSi said, "But to the people who open the gambling establishment, they would certainly hate him to the bone so much that they want the bones of a monk instead."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore these talented people wanted his life."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "I have heard of many things in jiang-hu, why have I never heard of 'Shan Liu'?"

Qin Ge said, "Because that is originally a very secret organization."

Tian SiSi said, "What they are doing are not shameful matters, why do they need the secrecy?"

Qin Ge said, "After they did something good, they are not willing to let others know, only then they are doing something truly good."

Tian SiSi said, "But to do truly good, that is not too easy."

Qin Ge said, "It is indeed not easy."

Tian SiSi said, "If you must do good, you will offend a lot of dishonest people."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "The dishonest people are not easy to cope with."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Therefore regardless of what they are trying to do, they must brave many dangers, and when they are not cautious enough, they can be like the monk Wu Ming, who died inexplicably on someone else's hands."

Tian SiSi said, "But they clearly know the dangers, right?"

Qin Ge said, "Regardless of the difficulty and many dangers, they do not care about them at all, not even dying."

Tian SiSi sighed, her eyes shone and said, "I do not know whether I will have the opportunity later to get to know them."

Qin Ge said, "I am afraid the opportunity will be very limited."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because they are doing this not to make themselves famous or to publicize themselves, even people around them might not know them, so how would you get to know them."

Tian SiSi said, "You do not know who they are?"

Qin Ge said, "Up until now, I only know Master Wu Ming, if he were not dead already, I think Master Wu Se would not have revealed his identity."

Tian SiSi said, "Besides him, there would be at least a scholar and a taoist priest."

Qin Ge nodded and said, "They could certainly be Shan Liu people, but possibly they were not either. If they did not say it themselves, nobody could determine that."

Tian SiSi hesitatingly said, "Inside this group of people, since it already has the monk, the taoist priest, and a scholar, it possibly has many kinds of strange people."

Qin Ge said, "Right, I heard that inside Shan Liu, they have many complex people, nothing else in the world is as complex as this organization."

Tian SiSi said, "How can these people get organized?"

Qin Ge said, "Because they share the same interest, same belief."

Tian SiSi said, "There is no other reason?"

Qin Ge said, "There is also a person who can organize them."

Tian SiSi said, "This person must be very great."

Qin Ge said, "Certainly."

Tian SiSi eyes flashed and said, "I must find a way to get to know him."

Qin Ge said, "You can't."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because nobody knows who he is."

Tian SiSi glanced at him and said, "Therefore, anybody is possibly him.."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi was staring at him and said, "You can also possibly be him."

Qin Ge had smiled and said, "If I were him, I would certainly tell you."

Tian SiSi said, "Really?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "You should not forget, we are good friends."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "It is a pity that you are not."

Qin Ge said, "I am not a Shan Liu person, because I am not qualified."

Tian SiSi said, "Why are you not qualified?"

Qin Ge said, "To enter Shan Liu, one must have complete self-devotion, must have the spirit to go to hell, and willing to go through the fire or water and not even balk at ten thousand deaths!"

Tian SiSi said, "You?"

Qin Ge sighed, "I am no good, I enjoy life too much."

Tian SiSi sweetly said, "Moreover you are also too famous, wherever you go, people will pay attention to you."

Qin Ge gave a forced smile and said, "This is precisely my biggest problem."

Tian SiSi sighed, "They elected you to be the scapegoat, I think because you are just too famous. Wherever you go people will recognize you, Even if you want to run, you still cannot escape."

Qin Ge sighed, "Fame portends trouble, a mother should teach this to her kids."

Tian SiSi said, "Now not only the Shao Lin Pai people will look for you, Shan Liu people will try to find you too."

Qin Ge said, "Shan Liu people are even more fearful than Shao Lin Pai people."

Tian SiSi said, "As soon as you walk somewhere, they will recognize you as the murderer."

Qin Ge gave a forced smile.

Tian SiSi looked at him, after a long sigh she dangled her head and said, "I knew that I had made a mistake."

Qin Ge said, "What mistake?"

Tian SiSi said, "I should not have told you to run a moment ago."

Qin Ge said, "Indeed I should not."

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "But why did you leave with me then?"

Qin Ge smiled and said, "Perhaps I did not leave for you?"

Tian SiSi said, "If not for me, then for who?"

Qin Ge said, "The person who rescued me a moment ago."

Tian SiSi said, "You know who he is?"

Qin Ge nodded and said, "Besides him, even if all the people in the world asked me, I would not have left."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because I truly admire him in my heart."

Tian SiSi widened her eyes and said, "I did not know that you have someone you admire."

Qin Ge said, "Such a person like him, you will admire regardless."

Tian SiSi said, "What kind of person is he?"

Qin Ge said, "The person who you have no alternative but to admire."

Tian SiSi said, "Actually who is he?"

Qin Ge smiled, smiled very mysteriously.

Tian SiSi's eyes flashed and said, "Is it Liu FengGu?"

Qin Ge stayed quiet.

Tian SiSi said, "Is it Yue HuanShan?"

Qin Ge stayed quiet.

Tian SiSi said, "Why didn't you say something?"

Qin Ge had smiled and said, "Do you know them?"

Tian SiSi said, "I don't know them now."

Qin Ge said, "I do not know them too."

Tian SiSi seemed bewildered and said, "Why don't you know them?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Maybe because I am very lucky."

Tian SiSi had stared at him for a while before turning aside, curled her lips and sneered, "I know now the kind of person that you admire."

Qin Ge said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "He is someone who is inferior to you, then you can admire him."

She did not let Qin Ge speak up, instead she injected, "When a man praises another man in front of a woman, that person is actually inferior to him, like"

Qin Ge said sharply, "Like when a woman praises another woman in front of a man, that other woman was actually a clown compared to her, right?"

Tian SiSi could not bear smiling, "That is right."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "If it is like that, you are calling the soul of men by the heart of the concubines."

Tian SiSi replied quickly, "What is so great about men?"

Qin Ge said, "Men are not so great, but he is willing to sincerely praise another man in front of a woman, to praise a truly great person."

Two

The men were different in a lot of ways than women. But regardless, both men and women were doing fine. Because little differences could actually be a wonderful thing.

If you were a man, it would be best to understand one thing:

If another man praised you in front of you, he did not really admire you fully, but considered you a fool who could be easily deceived, he must have a hidden agenda.

But if he praised you behind your back, then he was really praising you.

The women were actually different.

If you were a woman, you should best understood one thing:

If another woman praised you in front of you or behind your back, that could only mean that she was looking down on you.

Instead if she were scolding you behind your back, you should feel happy.

Some other matters were also equally wonderful.

When a man and a woman were alone together, the one who asked questions was usually the woman. If that happened, men should be happy. Because if a woman was willing to ask men questions, even strange or stupid questions, that meant that at least she did not dislike you. The more trivial was the question, the more she liked you.

But if she never asked you anything, and you had to be the one who entertained her, that meant that you liked her very much, but she did not really have a great interest in you.

If in your company, a woman did not even feel interested in asking you anything, what other interest she would have in you?

This situation happened in nearly every cases without an exception.

Except now.

Tian SiSi was a woman, she did not dislike Qin Ge. Therefore she was also asking:
“Who do you really admire?”

This question was originally very simple, very easy to reply.

But Qin Ge still would not answer.

Three

Men and women could be found in different places, either in a town or a village.

For a roaming man, the town would have certain advantages: when you had to stay for many evenings, you

could go to different places to eat.

That would be something good to have.

But to find a lonely woman late at night at those places, for sure, she could not be a good woman.

But “having something” would always be much better compared to “having nothing”.

Four

Even in the most prosperous town, you could still see many open areas, for some unknown reason, people just did not occupy them.

These places might be prepared for a house, a business place, or something that could thrive well and then afterwards people would wonder why that place had not been occupied before.

Everybody only knew that wherever there was some open spaces, people could go there to herd cows, to raise pigs, to fight, to kill people or even to urinate.

Only when someone’s brain got excited, would he be moved to try to use this open area to make money. To get the place ready to make money was not an easy matter. Not only you had to use your brain, you also had to work really hard to achieve your goal.

This outdoor stall was on a very big open area.

Tian SiSi had asked Qin Ge, “Where are you bringing me to eat?”

Qin Ge said, “To Seven and a half.”

Tian SiSi said, “Seven and a half?”

Qin Ge said, "Seven and a half cents is to pay for the food."

Tian SiSi said, "That place is called Seven and a half?"

Qin Ge nodded and said with a smile, "That place's boss is also called seven and a half."

Tian SiSi said, "How can this person have such a strange name?"

Qin Ge said, "Because when others have a haircut it costs 15 cents, but he only has to pay seven and a half cents."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because he is a bald person."

Tian SiSi also smiled.

Qin Ge said, "When he was selling in the marketplace, he was already very famous. Afterwards he has opened a beef food stall here, and everything is good. The beef noodles is good, the pig's feet noodle is also good, they are only sold seven and a half cents per bowl. Afterwards, this business has become really famous, the owner also has become really famous. So, many people who has come to this place also know this seven and a half person."

Tian SiSi said, "His business is very good?"

Qin Ge said, "Very good."

This outdoor food stall business was indeed very good.

Tian SiSi had never seen so many people in one place outside this late at night, and so many different kinds of people.

Several dozens of tables were all occupied by all kinds of people.

Some people rode horses, some people went by carriages to this place, so besides this open area, there were also a lot of stationary carriages and horses.

All different kinds of carriages and horses. Some carriage drivers were waiting, some were wearing very nice clothes.

Tian SiSi really could not understand, since these people had such nice attractive carriages and horses, why should they bother to come to this kind of shoddy outdoor stall, just to eat a great seven and a half cents of beef noodle bowl?

In that big stretch of open area, only a few lanterns hung at the front of the stalls.

The lanterns were already blackened with smoke so they were not very bright, and the place was really too big, so the lighting at most tables were almost non-existent. People's faces were just too dark to distinguish.

Tian SiSi had waited with Qin Ge at the side for a while, before they had finally found an empty table. Unexpectedly nobody had noticed Qin Ge.

After waiting for some time, a mystifying waiter finally came along and put the cups and chopsticks on the table.

"Want some wine?"

"Yes."

"How much?"

"Five catties."

After asking these two questions, this waiter turned around and left, not even bothering to look at their faces.

Tian SiSi was stunned, she could not help saying, "This waiter is very impolite."

Qin Ge smiled, "We are eating, not looking at the waiter."

Tian SiSi said, "But he has not asked you what we want to eat?"

Qin Ge said, "He does not need to ask."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because they only provide four side dishes to everyone."

Tian SiSi knits the brows, "Which four types?"

Qin Ge said, "Beef noodles, salted beef, pig's feet noodle and red-roasted pig's feet."

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, "Only these four types?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "These four types are also already enough, if someone does not like the beef, he can eat the pig's feet, if he does not like the pig's feet, he can eat the beef."

Tian SiSi sighed and smiled reluctantly, "It is really his talent that he can find these four types of dishes to serve."

Perhaps because this place only served these four dishes, then people thought that this place was something unique.

Qin Ge said, "I know that he is not a talent."

Tian SiSi said, "Oh?"

Qin Ge said, "But because he is not a talent, he can then get rich."

Tian SiSi smiled.

She also had no alternative but to acknowledge that this saying made sense.

Actually she was still not too clear about the truth.

Nobody really could make clear of this bewildering truth in this world.

The table and the place grew darker.

Tian SiSi looked around and suddenly found slivers of shadow flitting in the darkness, watching wandering souls coming and going. She could not clearly see their attires but they were like hunters eyeing to seize the rabbits.

That kind of vision really invoked evil intentions.

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, “Who are these people?”

Qin Ge said, “People doing business.”

Tian SiSi said, “What kind of business has to be done here?”

Qin Ge said, “Shameful business.”

Tian SiSi’s thought about something but then nodded, although she was still not that clear about it.

Besides men, there were also women in the darkness.

What were these women waiting to do? At least she seemed to understand about their intention.

Then she had turned to a place brightly lit at one side.

She saw every kind of people, the poor and the wealthy, the inexpensive and the expensive clothings.

Almost everyone was drinking — — although they shared the same place, they were not coming from the same world.

Then finally she saw that waiter bringing their wooden plates.

The noodle and the meat were all hot.

So long as they were hot, the food could not be too unpalatable.

Tian SiSi had eaten several mouthfuls before laying down the chopsticks, she looked at Qin Ge and said, "You said this place has become really famous?"

Qin Ge said, "Mmm."

Tian SiSi said, "Famous because it sells two kinds of noodles?"

Qin Ge said, "Mmm."

Tian SiSi looked around, sighed suddenly and said, "I think all these people must be sick."

Qin Ge said, "Which people?"

Tian SiSi said, "These people who come here especially to eat the noodle!"

Qin Ge waited until he had finished his beef noodle bowl, before giving a long sigh, "They are not sick."

Tian SiSi said, "That person?"

She said this as her eyes were staring at a person.

This person sat under the bright light, wearing a very soft, very comfortable light blue gown, not only was it very luxurious, the fitting was tailor-perfect.

He was not too old, his face expressed natural dignity, even while sitting on this broken table, rotten stool, nobody could despise him.

Tian SiSi said, "This person certainly has very high status."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "He must have servant girls in his house."

Qin Ge said, "Not just one, but many of them."

Tian SiSi said, "He can certainly eat anything at home if he wants to."

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "Then, if he is not sick, why does he bother to come to this kind of place to eat late at night?"

Qin Ge drank the cup of wine slowly, then he put down the wine cup slowly, he look far ahead at a distant place in the darkness. After a very long time, then he gave a low sigh and said, "Do you know what is called loneliness?"

Tian SiSi said, "Certainly, I was frequently very lonely before."

Qin Ge said, "What were you thinking at that time?"

Tian SiSi said, "My thought wandered everywhere, if I strolled out somewhere, I would ask anyone to chat with me."

Qin Ge had smiled suddenly and said, "You think that is loneliness?"

Tian SiSi said, "What is it if it isn't loneliness?"

Qin Ge said, "That is called boredom, the true loneliness is not like that."

He smiled very miserably before adding, "What is the appearance of true loneliness? Perhaps nobody could say clearly, because you would not know what you were thinking at that time."

Tian SiSi was listening.

Qin Ge said, "If you have experienced many things, but it suddenly does not matter to you at all. Or if you have obtained many things, but you suddenly felt all empty inside you. Or when you arrived somewhere at the dead of the night and you found yourself all alone..."

His voice grew softer, then he said slowly, "Only at that time, you can understand what loneliness really means."

Tian SiSi blinked her eyes and said, "You understand then?"

Qin Ge did not seem to have heard her, after a very long silence, he said, "Perhaps you did not think like that at the time, but that person sitting there all alone, perhaps he could feel emptiness in his heart, not knowing where to go, sometimes he wants to scream or something else to release that feeling..."

Tian SiSi said, "You should be thinking of something interesting at that time."

Qin Ge said, "Perhaps the person's biggest pain was that he could not control his own thought. Even if you tried your hardest to recollect the past happy thoughts but the ones that came up was only bitterness and pain, your heart just felt that it had been pierced by a needle."

Tian SiSi said with a smile, "Pierced by a needle? That is only what the writers describe"

Qin Ge drank the cup of wine and said, "Before I did not believe that a person's heart could really suffer so much pain, I also thought that what the writers described were in excess, but afterwards I only knew that even the most extreme rhetoric that a writer used still could not describe what you feel at the time."

He smiled miserably, then said, "If you have had that kind of feeling, only then you can understand why these people want to come here very late at night, running personally to this tattered outdoor stall to get drunk."

Tian SiSi was silent for a while before saying, "If he is afraid of loneliness, he does not need to come here."

Qin Ge said, "No?"

Tian SiSi said, "Why doesn't he look for his friend?"

Qin Ge said, "Fine, you may ask a friend to accompany you, for ten days, for half a month. But you cannot expect your friends to accompany you for a lifetime."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Qin Ge said, "Because your friends certainly also have their own problems to solve, their own family members to comfort, they could not accompany you forever."

He smiled and said, "Moreover you do not really want to have your friends share your pain forever."

Tian SiSi said, "You may at least hire a person to accompany you."

Qin Ge said, "That kind of person is not your friend, if you were really lonely, that person will not relieve it."

Tian SiSi rotated her eyes and said, "I knew someone who might bring relieve ..."

Qin Ge said, "What kind of person?"

Tian SiSi said, "A person like Zhang Haoer might be more comfortable here than anyone else."

She pointed to a fat person with a youth-looking pattern clothes and said, "He looks like a person who can have the strength to enjoy a girl."

Qin Ge said, "Right, he can go there. But if you go too often to that kind of place, you can become very, very weary."

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore, he would rather run here and drown his own sorrow?"

Qin Ge said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "But the person who comes here still has no friend, no one to understand his pain, wouldn't it be the same if he has just stayed all by himself?"

Qin Ge said, "That is completely different."

Tian SiSi said, "What is so different?"

Qin Ge said, "Because here you can feel other people's existence, feel his own pulse of life, or he may see some other people in more pain than him..."

Tian SiSi said, "If a person saw someone suffering more pain than him, his own pain could be lessened?"

Qin Ge said, "Sometimes yes."

Tian SiSi said, "Why? How can a person be so selfish?"

Qin Ge smiled forcedly and said, "Because a person is basically a selfish person."

Tian SiSi said, "I am not selfish, I only hope that everyone in the world can have joy."

Qin Ge gave a long sigh and said, "When you grow up, you will understand that this idea is impossible to realize!"

Tian SiSi said, "Why can't people be joyful?"

Qin Ge said, "Because if you want to be joyful, you must often pay the painful price. If you obtain something, at the same time you often lose something else"

Tian SiSi said, "Why do people think like that? Why don't they think in another way?"

Her eyes glittered, "If you suffer pain, just think of wonderful things. When you lose something, think about something else that you have gotten, wouldn't that feel more joyful then?"

Qin Ge was staring at her, before smiling and tossing down his drink. He said, "Because not many people in the world could think like you, otherwise this world would be a lot more lovable."

People who came here were not just lonely people.

Qin Ge said, "There are some people who come here only in the evening, because it is shameful to come here in the daytime. There are some people too who really like this place."

Tian SiSi said, "Some people really like this place?"

Qin Ge said, "Certainly, I like this place."

Tian SiSi said, "Why do you like this place?"

Qin Ge said, "This place is not that clean or comfortable, the beef and the pig's feet are not that special, but it certainly has a distinctive ambience."

Tian SiSi sweetly said, "What ambience? Fetid odor?"

Qin Ge said, "If you come to a big restaurant every day, sometimes if you do not go there for a few times, you feel something fresh and exciting."

Tian SiSi said, "So this place is good for people that are not in a good mood?"

Qin Ge said, "No, it is like"

He smiled, then said, "Like you are with your wife every day, but sometimes you look at other women, and although her face was like a clown compared to your wife, you still feel something fresh and stimulating."

Tian SiSi's face stiffened and said, "How can you say something like that in front of a lady?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Because I know that you will not marry me, sometimes when a man treats a woman as a friend, he forgets that she is a woman."

Tian SiSi smiled.

She smiled very sweetly, very happily.

But suddenly her heart felt indescribable disconsolate feeling, as if it was searching for something to cover the emptiness inside.

In her mind before, Qin Ge was the man, but now she had even forgotten that he was a man.

Because he was already her friend.

Her true need was not for a friend, but for someone who could accompany her forever, comfort her, let her lie down on his bosom.

Would she find this kind of a man later?
She did not know.

Actually what should this kind of a man look like?
She did not know.

Perhaps only because she never stopped looking that she could never find him.

Because perhaps she might have found him, but she had just let him go.

Didn't people always let go of things that they needed the most? Only after they lost the things, then they understood how important were the lost ones.

"In any event, I should never try to look for that big-headed ghost."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth.

"I should not even care if he never comes to see me again or even if he dies."

She told her heart again and again, like forcing herself to accept this truth.

But in the end, she realized that only when with Yang Fan her heart did not feel this terrible empty feeling. Perhaps she could get angry or get upset, but never get lonely.

Qin Ge was looking at her and said suddenly, "What are you thinking?"

Tian SiSi suddenly lifted up the wine cup and drank. She reluctantly smiled, "I was wondering whether that person will come or not."

Qin Ge said, "Who?"

Tian SiSi said, “Your most admired person.”

Qin Ge was smiling, smiling very mysteriously and said,
“That person has already come now.”

Tian SiSi said, “Where?”

Qin Ge said, “You just need to turn around.”

END OF CHAPTER 24

Chapter 25: A Divine Thief, a Lame Person, a Beautiful Woman

One

Tian SiSi had turned around immediately.
As soon as she turned her head she saw Yang Fan.

The old Yang Fan, the big head, the round face, with his distinguishable very fat, stupid appearance.

But Tian SiSi did not consider him ugly at all.

She only felt a sudden surge of warmth in her heart, not only warmth but also happiness.

It was the same kind of feeling when someone retrieved her most beloved thing that she had lost.

She almost nearly jumped up and called him.

But when she actually turned her head, her face seemed to stiffen.

Because Yang Fan did not seem to notice her, nor had he paid any attention to her.

Yang Fan was speaking with another person.

As if in his heart, all the people in the world seemed to be a lot more important than her.

Tian SiSi suddenly no longer felt empty, instead she felt awfully mad and angry.

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Now you ought to know who he is?"

Tian SiSi sneered, "I only know that you can see this big-headed ghost."

She could not bear asking, "The person you admire the most is really him?"

Qin Ge nodded.

Tian SiSi said, "The person who rescued you a moment ago was him?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "Moreover, the person who was afraid that you would catch a cold last night was also him."

Tian SiSi blushed furiously and said, "You saw that..."

Qin Ge said, "I had to pretend that I did not see it."

Tian SiSi was staring at him, and railed bitterly, "You already knew him before?"

Qin Ge said, "If I had not known him, I could not have admired him."

He was smiling, and also said, "The truth is if you were to admire a person, you would need to know him for a very long time, only then you would know what kind of a person he is."

Actually what kind of a person was Yang Fan?

Tian SiSi thought she knew him very clearly.

He was from a famous family, the third master Yang was the sole heir of the family property, destined to enjoy money and happiness for a lifetime.

But he did not enjoy a merry life.

Since he was very small, he had roamed about and created his own world.

He had studied under many martial arts teachers, but most of his masters afterwards took him as a friend.

He was an expert at living a life of dissipation. Someone said that he was dead drunk in Da-tong's brothel place for

17 days, the wine that he drank was enough to drown several people to death.

Sometimes he could also be found in a temple, but it was not clear whether he just wanted to rest or he wanted to confess his own evil.

His head was very big, he had thick-skinned face. Besides living a life of dissipation, he did not seem to have any other proper things to do.

This was Yang Fan— — Tian SiSi knew that much.

But she suddenly realized now that the more she got to know him, the more she could not really understand him. Was it because she had not looked deep enough?

Tian SiSi stared at him with big eyes, looking at Yang Fan.

He was standing there talking to several people. His voice was very low, bringing a little mystery with him. He seemed to always work a little mysteriously.

There were 5-6 people sitting there talking to him originally, but after a while other people had left, leaving only a person there sitting eating the noodles. His eating capacity was really not small, 6-7 empty bowls were already piled in front of him.

When Yang Fan came to him, he was gnawing at the pig's feet, but when he saw Yang Fan, he immediately stood up showing a great respect.

It seemed that besides Tian SiSi, everyone else all showed great respect to Yang Fan.

Actually what were they saying? What topic were they discussing?

Tian SiSi had called suddenly and said loudly, “Yang Fan, can you come here first?”

Yang Fan turned around to look at her with a frown. The person speaking with him was smiling and nodding, after a gentle two sentences, he walked away with a limp.

Tian SiSi discovered that he was a lame person who was also poor, thin and abandoned.

This person might not have had meals for several days, therefore he was seizing the opportunity to stuff all the beef noodles into his stomach.

Tian SiSi curled his lips and sneered, “I really do not understand what you were saying to flatter this kind of person.”

She had not said it when Yang Fan came over and said lightly, “You know him?”

Tian SiSi said, “Who would know him?”

Yang Fan said, “Since you do not know him, how do you know what kind of a person he is?”

Tian SiSi said, “What is so great about what kind of a person he is?”

Yang Fan said, “He does not have anything great, but still if he wants to speak to me, even if it is for three days and three nights, I will accompany him.”

Tian SiSi’s eyes grew bigger and said, “He will say something nice?”

Yang Fan said, “Not something nice, but something actually worth listening.”

He then said leisurely, "Something worth listening usually are not that pleasant to hear."

Tian SiSi sneered, "What has to be worth listening? Like what place to go to find women?"

Qin Ge suddenly laughed.

Tian SiSi turned her head to stare at him and said, "What are you laughing at?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "I am laughing at you all."

Tian SiSi said, "Laughing at us all? Who are us?"

Qin Ge said, "You and him."

He was smiling, also said, "When you have not met each other, both of you seem to think of each other a lot, but yet as soon as you meet each other, you actually cannot stop quarrelling....."

Tian SiSi's face stiffened and said loudly, "I am telling you, I am me, he is him, even if eight sticks were used to bind us that still would not bring us together."

Although she stiffened her face, but her complexion had become red.

Yang Fan smiled suddenly and said, "If eight sticks are not enough, how about nine sticks?"

Tian SiSi said maliciously, "With nine sticks I will kill you, kill this big-headed ghost."

She spoke this but before the end she giggled as her face became very red.

If you were really a girl who were supposed to be bound together with a man and be pulled somewhere, her face

would not blushed, she would just turned pale. She would not giggle.

For the first time Lady Tian felt that this place had a good point, the lighting was at least good.

She did not really want to let this big-headed ghost see her blush so fiercely.

Unfortunately that mystifying waiter suddenly walked in.

Seeing Yang Fan, he unexpectedly became like a different person, he showed a very kind smiling face. He bowed and said with a smile, "Today what do you want to eat?"

Yang Fan said, "You just arrange it."

The waiter said, "Is the previous arrangement good?"

Yang Fan said, "Fine."

The waiter said, "How about some wine?"

Yang Fan said, "Tonight I have to take care of something."

The waiter said, "Then a little bit is fine, a catty of wine certainly will not mess things up."

He bowed again and left.

Tian SiSi sneered, "There are only a couple of things here to eat, why did he have to ask?"

Yang Fan blinked and said, "Perhaps he only wanted to hear me speak."

Tian SiSi said, "Hear you speak? What is so pleasant to hear?"

Yang Fan said easily, "Many people say that my voice is pleasant to hear, haven't you noticed?"

Tian SiSi bent her waist immediately, holding her belly, as if suddenly feeling nauseated and wanted to vomit.

Qin Ge suddenly laughed.

Tian SiSi stared at him, "What are you laughing at?"

Qin Ge said, "I suddenly remember something, this saying is not only interesting, it is true."

Tian SiSi said, "What is it?"

Qin Ge said, "If a woman starts putting on airs in front of you, she is already expressing how much she likes you."

Tian SiSi called out, "That is nonsense, who said this kind of B.S?"

Qin Ge said, "Yang Fan."

He smiled while also saying, "Certainly Yang Fan, except Yang Fan, no one else can say something like this."

Tian SiSi winked, putting on a serious face she said, "There is someone else."

Qin Ge said, "Who?"

Tian SiSi said, "The pig."

Two

The food was sent out quickly, besides the beef and the pig's feet, all kinds of dishes unexpectedly also came out. Almost any kind of dishes you would want were all laid out on the table.

Tian SiSi was staring at that waiter and said, "Isn't this place only serves beef and pig's feet?"

The waiter said, "And the noodles."

Tian SiSi said, "No other?"

The waiter said, "No."

Tian SiSi nearly shouted, "Then where do these things come from?"

The waiter said, "Fished from the pots and pans."

Tian SiSi said, "Why didn't you send us these a moment ago?"

The waiter said, "Because you are not the eldest brother Yang."

He did not wait for Tian SiSi to ask anymore questions and turned around.

If this person were a girl, or if there were not so much oil on his body, Lady Tian would have held onto him and certainly taught him some manners. Unfortunately he was a man and the oil on his clothes was probably enough to stir fry 70-80 types of dishes.

Therefore Tian SiSi only sat there with a blank angry stare.

Actually what did this big-headed ghost have that cause others to be so good to him? She really did not understand.

Tian SiSi just sat there for a while before blurting out, "What did he say just a moment ago? Eldest brother Yang?"

Yang Fan said, "Seems so."

Tian SiSi said, "Why does he call you eldest brother Yang?"

Yang Fan said, "Why can't he call me eldest brother Yang?"

Tian SiSi said, "Is he your brother?"

Yang Fan said, "That is not good?"

Tian SiSi sneered, "Certainly good. As long as he is an individual, he can be your friend and be on intimate terms with you."

Qin Ge said with a smile, "But it actually has to be an individual, this is most important, because some people are not qualified."

Tian SiSi looked at him and said, "You are also his brother?"

Qin Ge said, "That is not good?"

Tian SiSi sneered, "Certainly good. Your tune has become very similar to his, if you were smaller, you could even become his son, that is still good."

Qin Ge said, "There is also a person whose tune has quickly become quite similar to his."

Tian SiSi said, "Who is it?"

Qin Ge said, "You."

Some people's behavior and action were so distinct that other people could quickly follow him involuntarily. It was like spreading the colds sickness, it was too easy to infect the others. When you stayed with him in the same place for a while, you could not help yourself being infected by him.

Tian SiSi detected suddenly that she had changed a little, that before she did not speak like this.

Should a girl speak like this?

She had not figured that out when from the darkness ahead, some 5 or 6 shadows had walked nearer. The person in the front was walking with a limp, the lame person.

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, "This crippled person is also your brother?"

Yang Fan said, "He is not called the cripple, nobody called him the cripple."

Tian SiSi said, "What do others call him?"

Yang Fan said, "Wu BanCheng."

Tian SiSi said, "His name is Wu BanCheng (half a city)?"

Yang Fan said, "His name is Wu BuKe (not possible), but all others actually called him Wu BanCheng."

Tian SiSi said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "Because nearly half of this city used to belong to their family."

Tian SiSi said, "Now?"

Yang Fan said, "Now there is only this place."

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, "This place is his?"

Yang Fan said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "He already looks so poor, why doesn't he open his own business in this place?"

Yang Fan said, "Because he is afraid that if he takes back this place, he will have nowhere to go in the evening."

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore he would rather die poor, and let others get rich on this place?"

Yang Fan said, "He is not poor."

Tian SiSi said, "He is not poor? How can he be not poor?"

Yang Fan said, "Although he has sold half of the city, he had actually gained half a city of friends, therefore he is still Wu BanCheng."

Qin Ge said, "Therefore he is still a lot richer compared to others."

It looked like there were certain people who considered having friends to be truly richer and happier than being rich.

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "So, he is actually an odd person."

Yang Fan said, "Because he is an odd person, therefore I can frequently hear strange news only from his mouth."

Tian SiSi's eyes shone and said, "Today you have heard some strange news?"

Yang Fan said, "He has many friends, his news is certainly very interesting."

Tian SiSi said, "What news do you hear?"

Yang Fan said, "He tells me that there is a temple outside the city."

Tian SiSi said, "You think this news is very strange? Only if a person had never been in a temple the whole life would he think that news is strange, even a pig should have been in a temple once!"

Yang Fan paid no attention to her, then said, "He also told me that there are three senior monks in the temple."

Tian SiSi disappointedly said, "Not only this pig has never seen a temple, he has never seen monks too."

Yang Fan said, "He also told me, today suddenly there are several dozens of monks in this temple, moreover they are not senior monks, but new monks."

Tian SiSi's eye had shone, she nearly jumped and said, "Where is this temple?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Since this news is not strange, why do you ask?"

Tian SiSi sweetly said, "The one who said that this news does not feel strange is the real pig."

She suddenly felt extremely excited.

If there were many new monks in the temple, they must certainly be the monks from that gambling establishment. And one of them must be the golden beard.

As long as they could find these monks, they could prove that the event this afternoon was not just a dream, that she was not talking nonsense. As long as they could prove this matter, they could prove that Qin Ge did not kill the meddlesome monk.

Therefore the key to revealing this plot was in that temple!

Qin Ge also could not bear asking, "Where is this temple?"

Yang Fan said, "Outside the north gate."

Qin Ge said, "How far is it from here to the north gate?"

Yang Fan said, "Very near."

Tian SiSi jumped up and interjected, "Such being the case, why don't we go now, what are we waiting for?"

Yang Fan said, "We should wait for a person."

Tian SiSi said, "Wait?"

Yang Fan said, "It is a person worth waiting for."

Tian SiSi said, "If we don't hurry there now, these monks might leave?"

Yang Fan said, "If they have left, I cannot do anything about it."

Tian SiSi said, "Why can't we hurry there, why do we have to wait for that person?"

Yang Fan said, "Because I have to wait."

Tian SiSi said, "He is so important?"

Yang Fan said, "Mmm."

Tian SiSi sat down again, pouted her mouth and could not bear asking, "Does he have something very important to tell you?"

Yang Fan said, "Mmm."

Tian SiSi said, "Actually what news?"

Yang Fan's face just responded by disinclined "mmm" all the time and he sipped the wine in the cup slowly while picking up a duck gizzard to chew.

Qin Ge said with a smile suddenly, "I think your alcohol capacity has dwindled recently."

Yang Fan smiled and said, "Indeed it has dwindled, but it would still see you crawling all around the place talking nonsense."

Qin Ge laughed and said, "Boasting again, when we find the opportunity, I will prevail over you."

Yang Fan said, "Do you remember when we were at the Fragrant hall, enjoying the Shaoxing wine"

At this critical time, these two people unexpectedly just chatted back and forth.

Tian SiSi became anxious and angry, and suddenly banged the table and said loudly, "Since you two already know each other long ago, why didn't you tell me?"

Yang Fan said, "Why did we have to tell you?"

Qin Ge said with a smile, "We know so many people, if we have to tell you one by one, three days and three nights are still not enough."

Men were really not a good thing, yesterday they pretended not to know each other, today they formed the battle front against her.

The most annoying thing was that when they said something, she could not argue against it.

Tian SiSi had suddenly remembered Tian Xin.

This servant girl was always glib, if she had her by her side helping her, maybe they could not bully her so easily.

But unfortunately she could not see this servant girl anywhere.

Immediately Tian SiSi banged the table again and said loudly, "How about my servant? Return her to me quickly."

Yang Fan said, "What are you saying?"

Tian SiSi said, "You brought along my servant girl, and you still dare to pretend you don't know?"

Yang Fan frowned and said, "When did I do that?"

Tian SiSi said, "Yesterday, when you went out of that gambling establishment, didn't she follow you along?"

Yang Fan said, "You asked her to leave you?"

Tian SiSi, "I could not have provided her lodging."

Yang Fan had not spoken, his complexion seemed to change really ugly.

Tian SiSi did not like his look and with an anxious smile she asked, "Haven't you seen her?"

Yang Fan shook his head.

Tian SiSi said, "YouYou do not know where she is?"

Yang Fan shook his head again.

Tian SiSi's hands and feet suddenly became ice-cold, she sighed, "She has been carried away by force by these people?"

Whenever someone mentioned about Mr. Ge, her hands and feet became icy cold.

Thinking that Tian Xin could possibly have fallen into this devils' hands, she felt shivering cold all over.

After a very long time, she only then struggled to stand up.

Yang Fan said, "You must leave?"

Tian SiSi nodded.

Yang Fan said, "Where are you going?"

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "To look for that dead servant girl."

Yang Fan said, "Look where?"

Tian SiSi said, "II would look for Zhang Haoer first, then look for Madam Wang."

Yang Fan said, "If she were really there, what would you do?"

Tian SiSi was stunned.

Wherever Tian Xin were, Mr. Ge would also possibly be there.

As soon as she saw Mr. Ge, her body felt weak, so what could she do?

Yang Fan said, "I think you should better sit down first and wait ..."

Tian SiSi said loudly, "Actually how long are we waiting?"

Yang Fan said, "Until the person comes."

Tian SiSi said, "What if he does not come?"

Yang Fan said, "I will continue to wait."

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "Is that person your father that you should be like this?"

And then someone behind her said lightly, "I am not his father, at the most I can only be called his old lady."

This voice was hoarse and low and deep, but had indescribable charm, even a woman who heard her voice would think that it was extremely pleasant to hear.

Tian SiSi had turned around and saw a woman.
She had never seen such a woman before.

Three

The light at that place was only as good as the chilly star lights.

She stood passively underneath.

Her face did not show any expression, she had not spoken and had not moved at all, not even her fingertips. But for some unknown reason, Tian SiSi for a quick moment felt that her whole body was like moving and speaking. In particular that eyes, the dim, partly opened eyes seemed to continuously give this half asleep appearance. But when these same eyes were looking at you, you felt that her life was giving a message about loneliness and at the same time, reaching out to you the cordiality that intertwined into the depth of your bone and body.

Whoever you were, you would feel thorough sympathy with her.

And yet when you wanted to approach her, she could suddenly become very remote

As far as the horizon.

Tian SiSi had never seen such a woman.

But she actually knew that such a woman was precisely whom men longed for even in their dreams.

Zhang Haoer had graceful bearing and was also very beautiful.

But compared to this woman, Zhang Haoer was simply like a clumsy countryside girl.

“The one Yang Fan was waiting for was her.”

END OF CHAPTER 25

Chapter 26: Wine and Be Drunk

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, but also had to acknowledge that she was indeed a woman worth waiting. And worth looking.

Yang Fan and Qin Ge's eyes were clear, continuously staring at her.

She had slowly sat down and had taken the wine cup in front of Yang Fan.

Qin Ge immediately poured the wine for her.

She raised her cup and quickly tossed it down, drinking even quicker than Qin Ge.

A woman originally should not drink like that.

But her way of drinking did not cause others to think that she was boorish, instead her alluring style of drinking could cause a person to get drunk not from the drink.

She had quickly downed five big cups of wine before she smiled at Tian SiSi.

Her smile was insipid as if she was weary of life, and yet her insipid smile was still elegantly beautiful.

Tian SiSi looked at her, like looking at the star in the sky.

Looking at her starlike eyes, the star light had seemed to change its color.

She was already drinking her seventh cups of wine.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips saying, "Someone was waiting for you here."

But her response was just that insipid smile.

Tian SiSi intentionally did not look at her as she coldly said, "If you have something important to say, it is best if

you can say it quickly, otherwise we have a very important thing to do.”

Yang Fan smiled suddenly and said, “When Wang SanNiang has not drunk enough wine, she is always disinclined to speak.” He evidently understood her very well.

Tian SiSi’s lips began to hurt from her own nipping, and then in her best serious voice she asked, “When will she have enough wine to drink then?”

Immediately Wang SanNiang smiled lightly and said, “Only when I am drunk.”

Tian SiSi said, “If you were drunk could you still speak?”

Wang SanNiang’s hands took another cup of wine and with a faraway look she said, “What I will say is a drunken rambling anyway.”

Tian SiSi said, “I did not know that some people will also listen to a drunken rambling”

Yang Fan smiled and said, “All living things must say some drunken ramblings at some point.”

Immediately Wang SanNiang smiled and patted lightly Yang Fan’s shoulder as she sweetly said, “You are very good, I have not seen a man like you for a while. No wonder some people will feel jealous for you!”

Although Tian SiSi was trying hard to endure patiently, she still interjected, “Who is jealous?”

Wang SanNiang had not replied, but turned her face to the light and said, “Have you seen my facial wrinkles?”

The lights were chilly clear.

Although Tian SiSi had not seen clearly the wrinkles on her face, she suddenly discovered that indeed she appeared very thin, pale and very weary.

Wang SanNiang said, "A beautiful woman will always appear well under the lamp, she will always appear young."

Tian SiSi said, "Oh?"

Wang SanNiang said lightly with a smile, "A woman who looks my age sometimes unavoidably must feel jealous, especially with such a girl like you."

Tian SiSi stiffened her face and said, "You are rambling?"

Wang SanNiang sighed gently and said, "Often the rambling is the truth, it is only a pity that often people do not like listening to the truth."

Yang Fan said, "I like listening to the truth."

Wang SanNiang glanced at him and said, "The story that you heard was not false."

Yang Fan's complexion had changed and said, "You know that it is not false?"

Wang SanNiang nodded slowly, no longer spoke.

Yang Fan also no longer spoke, he just stared ahead blankly, after a very long time he finally sighed and said, "Many thanks."

Wang SanNiang said, "You will later have the opportunity to thank me. Now"

She smiled at the thought and said, "You leave quickly, do not let this youngest sister wait with worryWhen a man makes a girl wait, he is not a fine gentleman."

Tian SiSi said, "What if a woman makes a man wait?"

Wang SanNiang said, "That is not really a problem, only"

Tian SiSi said, "Only what?"

Wang SanNiang's vision was still pointed at a distant place, she said, "Only you should better remember that men do not have a lot of patience, although you deserve to be waited upon, he cannot wait for a long time."

Tian SiSi was silent.

She seemed to chew on this indescribable bitterness in her speech.

Yang Fan said, "We are leaving, how about you?"

Wang SanNiang said, "I will stay here, I still want to drink several cups."

Qin Ge said, "I will accompany you."

Wang SanNiang said, "Why do you have to accompany me?"

Qin Ge also sighed and said, "Because I know the drinking taste of a loner."

That taste would not feel better.

Wang SanNiang smiled actually, lightly said, "Whatever the taste does not really matter, you do not need to accompany me, you just leave."

She had returned to the wine cup.

She seemed to changed completely into her loneliness.

Perhaps some people were besides her, but she would still be a lonely person.

Yang Fan no longer spoke, he stood slowly, and beckoned to the dark ahead.

The dark shadow emerged.

Nobody saw where he came from, like he was the dark demon in there.

That shadow still stood there, as if dissolving in the darkness.

After he bowed to Yang Fan, he waited there.

Yang Fan turned to Wang SanNiang and said, "SanNiang, I respect you a cup and leave."

Wang SanNiang said, "Just promise that this is not the last cup."

Yang Fan said, "Certainly not."

Wang SanNiang raised her cup and drink.

Tian SiSi could not bear saying, "We leave now?"

Yang Fan nodded.

Tian SiSi said, "You were not waiting to speak to her?"

Yang Fan said, "I have spoken to her."

Tian SiSi said, "Only that?"

Yang Fan pondered for a little while before saying slowly, "Sometimes a quick chat can exceed millions of words!"

He slowly walked into the darkness.

That shadow in the darkness suddenly leapt up high and vanished like the spirit.

Yang Fan darted after him.

Qin Ge and Tian SiSi also pursued from behind immediately.

After pursuing shortly, Tian SiSi could not bear looking behind once.

Wang SanNiang actually had not turned her head.

Tian SiSi could only see her elegant slender back that had curved a little, as if there was a very heavy burden on her shoulder. The burden of life.

Her back unexpectedly looked so forlorn, so weary, so lonely.

Yang Fan was waiting in the front.

In the darkness up front, a shadow could be vaguely distinguished waiting there.

Tian SiSi had finally caught up with them gently panting for breath and said, "Why do you have to go all out to pursue that person?"

Yang Fan said, "Because he is our guide."

Tian SiSi said, "Is that the same lame person who told us about the temple?"

Yang Fan said, "That person is not the cripple, he is Wu BanCheng."

Tian SiSi said, "It looks like your friends mix are indeed very broad, unexpectedly you also know this kind of person."

Yang Fan said, "You know what kind of person he is?"

Tian SiSi shook his head and said, "I only know that his levitation skill is really good."

Yang Fan said, "What else?"

Tian SiSi said, "What else? Nothing."

Yang Fan smiled beckoned suddenly to the shadow up front.

That shadow immediately rushed like light smoke to them.

Yang Fan had also rushed forward, during the high-speed encounter, Yang Fan seemed to have said something. But he spoke so low, Tian SiSi could not hear what he said. At this moment, that shadow passed over gently and swiftly from her side, looking lively like the wind.

Yang Fan also came back, bringing his smile at her.

Tian SiSi frowned, could not bear asking, "Actually why are you so happy?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "I only want you to have a look at what he is."

Tian SiSi said, "Then you should ask him to stand in front of me, let me look at him clearly, now his face is all black I cannot see clearly."

Yang Fan said, "If you cannot see his face, why don't you look somewhere else."

Tian SiSi said, "Where?"

Yang Fan said, "For example at his hands."

Tian SiSi said, "What is so attractive about his hands? Does he have more fingers in his hands?"

Yang Fan said, "His fingers are actually not that many, but he has more hands than ordinary persons." He looked at

Tian SiSi, smiled suddenly and said, "What has actually fallen from your body?"

Tian SiSi looked up and down, "Nothing."

Yang Fan said, "Really?"

Tian SiSi sighed, smiled forcedly and said, "Nothing could possibly have fallen from my body."

Yang Fan said, "Up above?"

Tian SiSi said, "Nothing above"

She had not completed her sentence when she realized that her hair hung loose now.

The hair tie had unexpectedly disappeared.

When he rushed besides her just now, did he managed to get her hair tie?

She was not dead, how could she not feel anything?

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Now you ought to understand what type of a person he is?"

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and said, "I did not know that your friend simply has three hands."

Yang Fan said lightly, "Not simply three hands, he has thirteen hands."

Tian SiSi coldly said, "Either three or thirteen, he is merely a thief."

Yang Fan said, "Have you seen several thieves?"

Tian SiSi said, "No, luckily."

That shadow was waiting for them in front, calmly stood there, as if he had never moved.

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "Can you ask him to come again, I want to have a look at him."

Yang Fan said easily, "Since he is only a thief, there is nothing attractive about him."

Tian SiSi said, "Iactually want to see how many hands he has?"

Yang Fan said, "You will not be able to see his hands."

Tian SiSi pouted her mouth and said, "Then, can I see his face?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

Tian SiSi said, "Why not?"

Yang Fan said, "Nobody has seen his face."

Tian SiSi passes, "You?"

Yang Fan said, "I have seen him."

Tian SiSi said, "Why can you see him, while others cannot?"

Yang Fan said, "Because I am his friend."

Tian SiSi was staring at him and said bitterly, "Besides the thief and the lame person, do you also have some nice friends?"

Yang Fan said, "No."

Tian SiSi could not bear saying with a smile, "The dragon mingles with dragons, the phoenix mixes with the phoenix, the mouse friend can dig the burrow, I have heard them all,

but unexpectedly you do not have any nice friends, I did not know that.”

Yang Fan said, “I also have a very wonderful friend, if others know they will probably laugh very loudly.”

Tian SiSi said, “How is this person wonderful?”

Yang Fan said, “She is all wonderful, the most wonderful part is besides causing trouble, she cannot do anything else.”

Tian SiSi could not bear saying with a smile, “Who is this person?”

Yang Fan said, “You.”

Lady Tian’s anger simply swelled up inside her, ready to explode.

Before getting to know Yang Fan, she never understood how a person could get fully irritated by someone else.

Now she had finally understood.

This big-headed ghost must have been born just to irritate her.

The most exasperating part was besides to her, he was very friendly and polite to other persons.

And equally exasperating, regardless of what she said, he never became angry because of her.

So what else could she have done?

If a man really could make a girl half dead with anger, he could not be considered too smart, but that was still very great.

It was only a pity that such matter did not often happen.

The majority of men were the ones who were half dead with anger by the girls.

Therefore the majority of girls all believed that men should be the ultimate scapegoat since they were born.

END OF CHAPTER 26

Chapter 27: Fan Yin Temple

One

Big forest on the hillside.

This temple lay on the forest on the hillside.

Fan Yin temple.

The dim light of night was indistinct, but one might vaguely distinguish these three brush-written words on a flaky gold lacquers.

After arriving there, “the thirteen hands” had simply disappeared.

Although it was very late at night, but the temple’s large oil lamp was still shining brightly before the Buddha statue. Gloomy light actually surrounded the tall wall outside, blurred by the pale yellow dense smoke, or was it cloud or fog?

Tian SiSi sighed in the darkness, every time she came to a place like this, her heart felt very uncomfortable. She only felt that temples seemed to be inundated with dead people, coffins, scary relics, ghosts... Things that would never make people happy.

You absolutely would never hear happy laughs inside the temple, you could only hear some monotonous droning sound of the buddhist drums, like a continuous sob of a resentful woman, sometimes the incantation did sound like a sobbing sound.

She liked listening to laughs, she never liked listening to people crying.

Now luckily no sound came out.

Unfortunately, no sound was often the most fearful sound.

Yang Fan's complexion was very serious.

Tian SiSi thought that he would go in to have a look and have her and Qin Ge wait outside.

She certainly would oppose that.

Regardless of what Yang Fan might say, she would certainly oppose it.

Who knew that Yang Fan had not said anything, and just walked forward majestically.

Tian SiSi could not keep her calm and said, "This temple is not a very secret place."

Yang Fan turned around and waited for what she would say.

Tian SiSi said, "But these people are actually very important."

Yang Fan said, "Which people?"

Tian SiSi had stared at him and said, "Certainly the golden beard and others who had become monks."

Yang Fan said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "Since they dared to gather these people here in the temple, they could certainly guard against the possibility of us coming here."

Yang Fan said, "Mmm."

Tian SiSi said, "They cannot afford to let us find these people, therefore"

Yang Fan said, "Therefore what?"

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore I think the outlook of this temple is not that simple, there must be an ambush inside."

Yang Fan said, "So what if there is an ambush?"

Tian SiSi said, "Since there is an ambush, we cannot just rush in like this."

Yang Fan said, "Then we should just draw back."

Tian SiSi said, "Since we are already here, how can we just go back!"

Yang Fan said, "We cannot go in, and we cannot go back, so what are you suggesting that we should do?"

Tian SiSi said, "We can have someone have a look inside, and the two other people wait outside to give help as needed."

She originally was determined to oppose this idea, but now she had said it herself.

Yang Fan unexpectedly did not seem to oppose the idea and said lightly, "Who do you think should take a look first?" Surprisingly, he felt alright asking this question. If he were another man, he would have certainly offered to volunteer first before the woman.

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips, and turned to Qin Ge. Unexpectedly Qin Ge also did not respond at all.

He seemed to be a very independent individual, but after being together with this big-headed ghost he seemed to become meeker and less original.

Tian SiSi said bitterly, "What are you saying? Who do you think should advance to have a look?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "Since you raised this idea, certainly you are the one who should go."

This pig actually felt that it was fine to let a woman be the first one in the battle front, letting the woman take the risk! Tian SiSi soon felt wild with rage, as she stamped her feet bitterly and said, "Fine, I will go first!"

Yang Fan said easily, "After you go in, if you meet with an accident, we can find a way to rescue you, whereas if we meet the danger, you will not be able to save us."

Although he exposed his friends to danger, he was still giving plausible explanations.

Tian SiSi no longer wanted to listen to him and turned around.

These two men really lacked prospects for a bright future, they were simply not good people, Lady Tian felt really disinclined to ever look at them again.

She walked without turning back through the stone pillars arriving at the front of the temple, and start stepping on the stone steps. She suddenly stopped.

The front gate was closed but not closed tight.

Some faint yellow smog, light blue indistinct candlelight fluttered from the crack between the gates.

Since the temple also had the incense and the candles, there should also be people inside.

Since people were inside, why was there no sound?

Did they see Tian SiSi, therefore they were calmly waiting there?

Had they all been killed by the person to eliminate witnesses. Were they all dead?

Lady Tian was originally aroused by anger before entering the place, but now her anger had dissipated and her hands and feet had become ice-cold, she wanted very much to hold on onto a man's hands.

In particular Yang Fan's hands.

His hands always seemed to be very warm, very stable, very kind, the kind of hands a girl liked to rely on.

It was only a pity that this big-headed ghost's shadow could not even be seen.

Qin Ge had also disappeared.

Tian SiSi had turned around but could no longer see them.

Her hands had become colder, clammy with cold sweat, she almost could not bear shouting loudly. But Lady Tian certainly would not do that, she would rather die than being disgraced in front of this pig.

After standing for a long time at the stone steps, Lady Tian finally gathered up her courage, and pushed open the gate.

The gate was closed but not barred.

When Tian SiSi pushed it gently, it slowly opened with a creaking sound.

The grating sound could cause a person listening to feel even scared.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, stepped on the topmost stone steps, and did a quick look around.

She could not see anything.

The courtyard was filled with the faint yellow smog, it was not really clear whether that was smoke or fog.

A faint light illuminated the hall of that temple, although the light was not bright, at least it was better than nothing.

Tian SiSi drew a long breath, and stepped forward slowly. She only hoped that she had not stepped on a person's body.

Two

There was no dead people in the courtyard.
But no live people either.

Passing through the courtyard, the light from the hall of the temple still shone.

There was no one in that temple hall, only an incense burner stood in front of the statue that send out the faint yellow smog.

Where are the golden beard and others?
Did they expect Lady Tian to come and find them here, therefore they had sneaked off first?

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, and walked forward step by step, walking slowly.

Was she afraid to see live people? Or dead people?
She was not clear about it either.

The statue in that temple hall was all mystifying, giving a half-dead look, which permeated chilliness in this smog, causing one to feel even more fearful.

Tian SiSi had suddenly remembered Mr. Ge.
Mr. Ge gave precisely this kind of mystifying, half-dead look.

Was he behind this idol? Maybe he was just waiting for Tian SiSi to walk by before he sprung out alive, captured her and compelled her to marry him?

Thinking about it, Tian SiSi's legs had become so weak that she could no longer walk.

She seemed to see a bench at one side so she took a seat.

She absolutely did not really want to sit down in this kind of situation, after sitting down, she could not sit still. She had to sit down to feel a little bit of relief. Without sitting, her legs just could not support her.

The wind blew hard from outside, sending the smog in that hall everywhere. This mystifying half-dead statue seemed to suddenly become alive, making threatening gestures, waiting to bite on people.

Tian SiSi felt the cold sweat beads dropping down on her forehead.

"That big-headed ghost unexpectedly has really let me come inside, and now not even his shadow can be seen."

Tian SiSi tried to think beyond her anger but she felt more hateful instead. Suddenly, she realized something very fearful.

The place that she sat on seemed to move upwards, as if someone was lifting this bench upwards.

She mustered her courage to look below.

Instantly, Lady Tian's whole hair had stood up.

What she had sat on was not a bench, but the cover of a coffin.

The coffin itself was already fearful, but the fact that this cover was slowly raising up was even more fearful.

A hand had suddenly extended from the coffin, and held on to Tian SiSi's hands.

The hand that was as cold as ice.

Tian SiSi's whole body became like a jelly.

She originally wanted to rush outside, but as her body tried to move away, she had dropped down instead, nearly fainting with fright.

If she had really fainted, perhaps that would have been better.

But she was as sober as a monk, not only she could see everything, she could also hear everything.

From the coffin, not only the hand had extended outside, but the laughter had also suddenly filled the room. That gloomy, sneering laughter was grating to the ears like the cry of the ghosts.

Tian SiSi exhausted her whole strength before she could say loudly, "Who hides in the coffin? I know that you are a person, even if you pretend to be a ghost, that will not work."

She could really tell that this hand belong to a live person?

END OF CHAPTER 27

Chapter 28: Unexpected Matters

How could a live person's hand be so cold?

The laughter inside the coffin stopped suddenly, the only sound was her shout echoing in the empty main hall.

That kind of sound seemed like the cry of the ghosts too.

Tian SiSi exhausted her strength trying to throw away this hand.

But this hand seemed to be stuck to her hand, regardless of how much effort she spent to fling it she still could not escape.

She was panting for breath, her whole clothes had been soaked by the cold sweat.

Actually whose hand was this hand?

He had started to make his move, why wasn't he willing to appear now?

Maybe he did not have any head or body, this ice-cold ghost?

Tian SiSi wanted to try to pull from this hand in the coffin.

Who knew that before she tried that, this hand had put forth its strength instead.

As soon as that fearful strength pulled her, she seemed to lose the strength to struggle and revolt. Her entire body had been pulled suddenly by this hand into the coffin.

Whoever experienced something like this must have fainted with fright.

It was only a pity that she was very, very sober.

Inside the coffin, it was just not a hand, but a head, a body, a whole person.

The body was hard, besides a corpse, no other body including that of a ghost could be that hard.

As soon as Tian SiSi had entered the coffin, she fell inside horizontally across this hard body.

Then the coffin cover had fallen down.

The light, the smog did not enter the coffin, what was left was just pitch-black darkness.

Although Tian SiSi was awake and alert, but her body could not move at all.

Her whole body all felt stiff, even colder than this hard corpse.

This corpse's hand had grasped her suddenly and hugged her.

She wanted to call out, but her throat felt like something was blocking it.

She was so frightened that she felt she must be going crazy and wished that she could die so everything would fade away. But it was a pity that sometimes dying was not so easy.

A succession of ice-cold teardrops had dropped down on her face.

Why did she have to suffer this pitiful and bitter experience.

She felt utter suffering through this endless nightmare.

If she could have wailed bitterly, perhaps she would have felt better, but she could not do that.

She could only burst into tears silently.

This gloomy corpse had actually laughed.

Intermittent laughter with warm air had pierced into Tian SiSi's ears.

This corpse could actually emit warm air!

Tian SiSi's stiff throat muscle suddenly relaxed, so she gathered her strength and immediately screamed.

Waiting until her shout had become hoarse, this corpse then word by word said with a smile, "You can shout until your throat get exhausted. But nobody would hear you, not even a ghost."

This voice was low and deep, also monotonous, very few people had heard this fearful voice.

But Tian SiSi had heard it actually.

Her breathing stopped immediately.

This was not a corpse, but an individual.

But no other corpse in the world would be as fearful as this person.

Mr. Ge.

She tried to say these two words, but her throat could only make some croaking noise.

Mr. Ge laughed and said, "Now that you know who I am, why should you still be afraid?"

Tian SiSi was not afraid.

Her feeling could not just be described by a simple word "afraid"

Mr. Ge's hand skimmed over her body, before he slowly said, "Don't forget that you have agreed to marry me. I am your husband, resting in the same place as your husband should not be a cause for fear, right?"

His hand was like a snake, skimming over up and down. His ice-cold stiff body had also moved a bit.

Tian SiSi suddenly screamed and said, "Let me go... let me go..."

Mr. Ge said, "Let you go! Do you think I can let you go?"

Tian SiSi said, "What do you want?"

Suddenly her voice had become much clearer.

When a frightened person had reached the extreme fear, the whole body somehow could strangely relax instead.

Why was this? Nobody had really understood why because this kind of bitter experience itself was very seldom experienced by people.

Mr. Ge said easily, "What do I want? I only want to rest with you in the same place. Since we can't do it on a bed while living, then we can do it in death inside a coffin."

Tian SiSi said, "Then why don't you quickly kill me as well?"

Mr. Ge said, "Do you really want to die?"

Tian SiSi closed her teeth tightly and said, "If I have died, whatever you do to me would not be a problem."

Mr. Ge said, "But I do not want you to die now."

Tian SiSi said, "YouUntil when do you want to wait?"

Mr. Ge said, "Can you guess?"

His hand slithered along Tian SiSi's clothes.

The two people went against each other in a coffin, even if Tian SiSi had the strength to avoid him, she still had no where to hide.

She bit her own lips, until it bled.

The pain caused her to become more sober, she gave a long sigh and suddenly said, "You sincerely want me?"

Mr. Ge said, "I have spent such big effort to care for you, you also ought to know it clearly."

Tian SiSi said, "If you sincerely want me, you should not use this method."

Mr. Ge said, "What method should I use?"

Tian SiSi said, "Parents' rule, officially request for my hands via the matchmakers, you ought to know about this."

Mr. Ge said, "You want me to put in a request to Second Master Tian to seek a marriage alliance?"

Tian SiSi said, "Right."

Mr. Ge said, "If he complies? You are willing to immediately marry me?"

Tian SiSi said, "Certainly."

Mr. Ge had smiled suddenly and said, "This should be easy."

Tian SiSi said, "Easy?"

Mr. Ge said with a smile, "Certainly easy, I will immediately seek a marriage alliance now."

He complied so readily that Tian SiSi was so stunned.

She could not understand why he would think getting the exemption from her father would be a very easy thing to do? Why was he so confident?

At this moment, she suddenly felt this coffin descending slowly.

She had to ask, "Where are you taking me? The eighteenth hell?"

Mr. Ge said with a smile, "That place is not too bad either, at least it is warmer, there is no blowing wind nor any drenching rain."

Tian SiSi said, "But my father cannot be in there, whether he is alive or dead, he would never be there!"

Mr. Ge coldly said, "You have not gotten down there, how do you know that Second Master Tian will not be there?"

The coffin still descended downward, Tian SiSi's heart was also sinking!

"Has my father fallen into the clutch of this malicious ghost, therefore he has so much confidence?"

That could not be.

She wanted a way to comfort herself, "Surely my father is not such an easy person to cope with!"

Thinking about Second Master Tian's glorious lifetime achievement, Lady Tian felt slightly better.

At this moment, the coffin had stopped.

Then the coffin cover was raised suddenly, a sliver of gloomy light permeated into the coffin.

Thereupon Tian SiSi saw Mr. Ge's face.

His face showed that kind of mystifying, half dead appearance, that did not have any expression.

Even a truly half-dead person would not have such frightfully ugly face like this.

As soon as she saw this face, Tian SiSi could not help but shut her eyes.

Mr. Ge said, "Why don't you open your eyes to have a look?"

Tian SiSi said, "Looklook at what?"

Mr. Ge said, "To see whether Second Master Tian is here?"
His hands had unexpectedly relaxed.

Tian SiSi mustered her whole strength to jump up, but she was immediately stunned, as if she had dropped into ice-cold water.

As soon as she jumped up, she saw Second Master Tian.
If she had not seen it with her own eyes, she still would not have believed that Second Master Tian was really here.

This place was a square room, without any doors or windows, the only entrance was likely the big coffin. The light seemed to emanate from somewhere, a dim light, just like the lantern of hell.

There were several chairs in front.

A clear, thin faced old person sat on the middle chair, his hand was holding a deep green pipe.

Behind him stood a woman who was pounding his back gently.

Another woman unexpectedly sat on his thigh, trying to light the pipe for him.

Tian SiSi's whole body felt ice-cold.

She recognized that this person was certainly Second Master Tian, she recognized the green jade pipe as well.

She had once sat on her father's thigh and tried to light the pipe.

Whoever was in that situation would throw herself at her own father immediately.

But Tian SiSi just stood there trembling nearby the coffin.

Because she recognized these two women.

The one who stood behind Second Master Tian pounding his back gently was Madam Wang. The one sitting on his thigh was unexpectedly Zhang Haoer. This shameless woman always liked to sit on a man's thigh.

Tian SiSi's body shook all over, she was so mad that some of her tears had dropped down.

Second Master Tian actually appeared very happy, and smilingly said, "Very good, you have finally come." This is a typical father to daughter conversation, who had just found his own lost daughter.

Tian SiSi really burst into tears and said tremblingly, "YouYou knew that I would come?"

Second Master Tian nodded.

Madam Wang cluck-clucked and said, "You come at just the right time, we were just discussing about you a moment ago."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said, "What were you discussing?"

Madam Wang said with a smile, "I was seeking a marriage alliance to Second Master Tian for Mr. Ge a moment ago."

Tian SiSi said, "HeWhat did he say?"

Madam Wang said, "A man and a woman getting married is something to celebrate. Moreover, you two are precisely a perfect match, what else do you think he will say?"

Zhang Haoer also turned around and sweetly smiled, "Second Master Tian certainly agrees immediately, now it is you, the young couple's turn to thank us, the matchmakers."

Tian SiSi stared and looked at her father without speaking and without moving.

Her whole body seemed already numb.

Unknown to her, Mr. Ge had stood by her side and embraced her waist with his hand.

Tian SiSi's eyes straightened, without any expression she coldly said, "Move away your smelly hand quickly."

Mr. Ge said softly with a smile, "Now the parents agreement is already sought, the matchmakers has also put in the words, why are you still feeling shameful?"

Tian SiSi did not pay attention to him, her eyes kept staring at Second Master Tian and suddenly said loudly, "Actually who are you?"

Madam Wang said with a tender smile, "Now, now, look at you, how can you not know your own father?"

Tian SiSi ran over suddenly and said with a hissing voice, "Actually who are you? Why are you pretending to be my father? Where is my father?"

She just ran over before she was hugged from behind by Mr. Ge.

Madam Wang glanced at her and said, "You know that he is not Second Master Tian? How do you know?"

Tian SiSi struggled with all her might and screamed, "Where is my father? Let me find him!"

Madam Wang sank her face and calmly said, "I am telling you, from now henceforth, this person will be Second Master

Tian, he is your father, he is the only Second Master Tian in the world, there is no other.”

Tian SiSi’s body suddenly felt weak, she finally could not bear the situation and wailed bitterly.

Madam Wang had pounded gently the back of “Second Master Tian”, but at this moment she suddenly slapped him and coldly said, “How many times have I taught you, how can you still be discovered by her?”

This person put on a long face and said, “II do not know.”

Madam Wang slapped him again and said, “I have told you never to open your mouth, why do you still talk too much?”

This man protected his face and said, “I only spoke a sentence a moment ago, IHow do I know”

He slid suddenly from the chair and knelt down.

Madam Wang sneered and walked around him, her face was filled with murderous intent.

Mr. Ge suddenly said, “Keep him, he will have his use later on.”

Madam Wang sneered and kicked him rolling as she said sternly, “Useless thing, roll behind my back quickly.....Quick!”

Zhang Haoer sighed gently and said, “I already knew that he could not act like him, even if his face resembles Second Master Tian, but how can he act like Second Master Tian?”

Madam Wang eyed her with the corner of her eyes, with a stiff smile, she said, “He certainly cannot deceive you, but

others are not like you who had an affair with Second Master Tian."

Zhang Haoer gave a faint smile and said, "Are you being jealous?"

Madam Wang had smiled and said, "Why should I be jealous, but do you still dare to accompany him to sleep?"

Tian SiSi jumped up suddenly, clenched her teeth and said, "Where is my daddy now? If you do not dare to bring me to see him, at least tell me where he is."

Madam Wang sighed gently and said, "We are really a little afraid to bring you to see him."

Tian SiSi's complexion became paler and said, "Why?"

Madam Wang said, "I asked you something, you have not answered it, so why should I answer you?"

Tian SiSi said, "What did you ask me?"

Madam Wang said, "How did you see that that person was not Second Master Tian?"

Tian SiSi sneered, "Can't you see?"

Madam Wang said, "He certainly did not have Second Master Tian's style, his acting was probably not entirely alike Second Master Tian, but he just sat there without moving, and in such dim lighting too, how could you still see that?"

Tian SiSi hesitatingly said, "I am telling you, my father's health was recently not very good. He had not smoked for several months."

Madam Wang and Mr. Ge looked at each other and nodded.

Tian SiSi said, "I asked you a question."

Mr. Ge said, "What did you ask?"

Tian SiSi said, "My father"

Mr. Ge had interrupted her suddenly and said, "If you want to see your father, that is also very easy. As long as you marry me, I will certainly lead you home to pay a visit to father-in-law."

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth and said bitterly, "I urge you to quickly lose your heart's wish."

Mr. Ge said easily, "I will never lose heart."

Tian SiSi suddenly screamed and said, "No matter what your heart's wish, I would rather die than marry you, even if my father really complies, I would rather die."

Mr. Ge said, "Why?"

Madam Wang said, "Why? He is not too old. He does not have a wife, his moral behavior is not bad, his wugong skill is excellent, why can't you marry him?"

Tian SiSi screamed, "No matter what, he is just not a person!"

Zhang Haoer blinked and said with a smile suddenly, "I think I can infer that you dislike him because he is too ugly."

Tian SiSi said, "Humph."

Madam Wang walked and patted Mr. Ge's shoulder and said with a smile, "If you become handsome, perhaps she would marry you."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "A pretty girl would like to have a matching husband."

Mr. Ge said, "You want me to become handsome?"

Zhang Haoer said, "The more handsome the better."

Mr. Ge smiled and suddenly said, "That is also easy."

He turned around suddenly, and after a long time he turned around again slowly.

Zhang Haoer clapped with a smile, "Really has become a lot more handsome, such a man, everyone will like including me."

Madam Wang also said with a smile, "It looks like if Miss Tian is not willing to marry him, others will fight to get him."

Zhang Haoer said, "That is true."

Tian SiSi originally was not willing to look at this person even if she was dead, but curiosity caused her to take a look.

She only looked once before she was also stunned.

Mr. Ge had really completely turned into another person.

A mature, outstandingly handsome, romantic middle-aged person, the kind of man that possessed unique leadership strength.

That was precisely the charm and elegance that moved young girls' hearts.

Tian SiSi nearly could not believe her own eyes.

Madam Wang looked at her and said softly with a smile, "Have you never heard of disguising technique?"

Of course, Tian SiSi had heard of it.

But although Mr. Ge's face did not show any expression, that face did not look like it was the disguised face that could be easily altered.

But perhaps that was because Tian SiSi never looked at this person carefully.

She did not dare to look at this person even once.

But if he was obviously a handsome man, why did he have to become this scary ugly person.

Was it because he did not dare to expose his own real identity, therefore he never dared to show his own proper face?

What was his real identity?

Tian SiSi became more suspicious, but she was actually no longer as afraid.

Mr. Ge's present appearance would not incite fear, not only his face was handsome, but his smiling face was gentle and charming.

He looked at Tian SiSi, and smilingly said, "Now I would match you, right?"

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "With your appearance, even if a goddess descends to earth, you will still be a match."

Tian SiSi's heart had somewhat been moved, but she made an effort to shake her head and said loudly, "This is not good!"

Zhang Haoer said, "Why isn't it good?"

Tian SiSi said, "I do not know him, no one knows him, how can I marry him?"

Zhang Haoer said, "This is actually true, a person like Lady Tian, certainly must marry an honored and popular person."

Madam Wang said with a smile, "Luckily, our Mr. Ge's name and fame and yours are a perfect match, therefore you two are really properly matched."

Tian SiSi said, "Oh?"

Madam Wang said, "If you know his real name, you might get real scared."

Tian SiSi said, "Oh?"

Madam Wang said easily, "Have you heard of Liu FengGu?"

Liu FengGu?

This person was unexpectedly the Chiangnan's number one hero Liu FengGu.

Tian SiSi was really scared.

Liu FengGu was also a great person in her mind, but she could never have dreamed that this mean and shameless person was unexpectedly someone who was a great person in her mind!

END OF CHAPTER 28

Chapter 29: Yang Fan and Liu FengGu

One

If this had happened before this, Lady Tian would have probably jumped up with joy.

But the present Lady Tian would behave entirely different.

Unexpectedly she contained her anger and stared at him, “Are you really Liu FengGu?”

Liu FengGu was smiling and said, “That is not false.”

Tian SiSi said, “You are really that Chiangnan’s number one in wugong, the quick-witted unparalleled in the world Liu FengGu?”

Liu FengGu said with a smile, “Liu FengGu is myself, there is no other.”

Not only his appearance had changed, his voice had also changed, becoming more gentle, more courteous, and more charming.

Tian SiSi said, “You say that you are Liu FengGu, but how do I know that you are not telling me lies?”

Immediately Liu FengGu smiled lightly and his body leaped up high.

She saw with her own eyes that he had hit the roof quickly, with arms open wide, he suddenly flew to the side like a handsome swallow.

And then he pasted to the roof like a fly.

Zhang Haoer had clapped loudly and vigorously.

Madam Wang said, “This is precisely the most difficult to practice levitation skill, “seven types of flying swallow”, this

is the unique skill that only Liu FengGu has.”

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, “No need for you to say anything, Lady Tian certainly can judge his quality for herself.”

Tian SiSi could certainly judge his quality.

She knew that this kind of changing-direction-in-the-air levitation skill was the most difficult and the best kind of levitation skill.

She could not bear sighing in secret, as she realized that this mean and shameless person was really someone whom she had thought of as a great person.

Liu FengGu fell lightly in front of her, his smiling face was the gentlest kind, as he said, “Now have you believed me?”

Tian SiSi stood silently for a while before giving a long sigh, “I believe you, but I still do not understand something.”

Liu FengGu said, “You do not understand? What matter don’t you understand?”

Tian SiSi said, “If such a person like you had frankly and with upright means sought a marriage alliance with me, perhaps I am already married to you, why do you have to go around like this?”

Liu FengGu said with a smile, “If you marry me now, it is still not too late.”

Tian SiSi said, “But it is too late now.”

Liu FengGu said, “Why?”

Tian SiSi said, “Because.....Because I already have someone I love.”

Liu FengGu sank his face and calmly said, "It is only a pity that your beloved is a murderer who can never appear again in the daylight."

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "You think I meant Qin Ge?"

Liu FengGu said, "He is not?"

Tian SiSi's eyes brightened as she suddenly sneered, "If you think my beloved is Qin Ge, and therefore you have framed him by putting the murder accusation of the meddlesome monk on his shoulder, then you are thoroughly mistaken."

Liu FengGu seriously said, "Then who is he if not Qin Ge?"

Tian SiSi was nipping her lips and said, "Although he may not be as attractive as you, but he is actually very intelligent, and a very lovable person!"

Liu FengGu coldly said, "Actually who is he?"

Tian SiSi said, "He is surnamed Yang, called Yang Fan."

She stole a look at Liu FengGu, but who knew that Liu FengGu did not show any expression.

Tian SiSi also said, "Not only is he the person I like, moreover my father has also recognized him as his son-in-law, therefore the only way I will not marry him is only if ..."

Liu FengGu said, "Only if?"

Tian SiSi said, "Only if he is willing to give me to you."

Liu FengGu hesitatingly also said, "So as long as he is willing to give you to me, you are willing to marry me?"

Tian SiSi said, "Right."

Liu FengGu said, "You will not go back on your words?"

Tian SiSi said, "I will not renege on a promise."
When she spoke, her heart bloomed secretly.

Although that big-headed ghost had his hateful traits,
but he definitely would not betray a friend.

Moreover, although his face looked stern and unyielding,
perhaps actually in his heart he was already secretly in love
with her.

"If he knew that I were here, he would certainly have
damned all the consequences to rescue me."

Had he not rescued her many times before?

Thinking about it brought some warm happiness in her
heart.

She was suddenly only thinking of his good points.

Although she was hating him so much a moment ago, but
at the present time she had forgotten everything about it.

Liu FengGu was unexpectedly silent.

It was as if he suddenly realized that this was an
impossible mission.

Tian SiSi eyed him with the corner of her eyes and said
easily, "I have said that I will not renege on a promise, why
don't you ask him to chat with you, perhaps he will agree."

Liu FengGu was silent for a very long time, before he
smiled lightly and suddenly said, "I do not need to look for
him."

Tian SiSi blinked and said, "Why? Didn't you want me?"

Liu FengGu said, “Yes, but actually there is no need to find him, because.....”

Tian SiSi could not bear asking, “Because what?”

Liu FengGu smiled very strangely as he said word by word, “Because he will come here.”

Tian SiSi was stunned and said, “YouHow do you know?”

Liu FengGu smiled mysteriously.

“Has that big-headed ghost also fallen into their snare?”
That could not be!

His head was so big, how could others get him that casually, moreover Qin Ge was also standing ready besides him. Based on their wugong skills and quick wits, even ten Liu FengGus would not necessarily be able to cope with them.

Tian SiSi was stunned momentarily but then she smiled.
Now she only hoped that Liu FengGu had not deceived her, she only hoped that Yang Fan would really come very quickly.

At this time, she saw a person, walking self-assuredly from outside!

Yang Fan!
Yang Fan had really come!

Two

If you observed carefully, you could find that some people in the world could appear as opposite characters depending on their needs.

One moment he was a gentleman, and the next moment, he suddenly turned into a villain. One moment, he was serving tea or wine for you, he even would kneel in front of you to lick your feet, but the next moment, he would stiffen his face and kick you down.

Although there were not that many people who were like this, there were not too few either.

Fortunately there were also some people, who regardless whether you were in good luck or in bad luck, he would always appear the same way.

Yang Fan was this kind of person.

Regardless of where you see him, he would always show that nonchalant laughing appearance.

His head always looked bigger than anyone else, he walked along the road unhurriedly, as if even when the sky was falling, he still had no need to worry.

This kind of appearance could not be his natural appearance, nor could he be considered very lovable.

But at this moment in Tian SiSi's eyes, he never looked more lovable.

"He is certainly going to try his hardest to rescue me!"

First as long as there was Yang Fan, there was no problem in the world that could not be solved.

Tian SiSi liked this development so much, she almost jumped.

What was strange was when Liu FengGu saw Yang Fan, he unexpectedly was not surprised at all, instead he seemed to enjoy his appearance.

He had also beckoned unexpectedly to Yang Fan and said, "Come here."

Yang Fan came to him.

As soon as he came in Tian SiSi thought that Qin Ge would also come.

Who knew that Yang Fan had just calmly stood there with his smiling face.

Tian SiSi's heart started to wonder, "Perhaps he is only waiting for his opportunities, this big-headed ghost is always very patient and brave."

She was staring at his hands, hoping that his hands would strangle Liu FengGu's throat all of a sudden.

Yang Fan had not looked at her once, as if he had not known that she was there.

Liu FengGu smiled and said, "You are late."

Yang Fan was smiling and said, "Regretfully."

Liu FengGu said, "You have no need to say sorry to me, this Miss Tian is the one waiting for you, she was very worried."

Yang Fan said, "Oh?"

As if he had just found out that Tian SiSi was here, he turned around to smile at her and said lightly, "With regrets, I did not know that you were waiting for me here."

Tian SiSi stared with big eyes and said, "You did not know?"

Yang Fan shook his head.

Tian SiSi almost screamed, but she reluctantly endured this patiently and said, "Where do you think I am?"

Yang Fan said with a light smile, "Wherever you are, it does not seem to have any relations with me."

Tian SiSi said, "You have you forgotten who asked me to come here?"

Yang Fan said, "Your feet belong to your body, you certainly came here in your own accord."

Tian SiSi was so stunned she could not say anything.
She discovered suddenly that Yang Fan seemed to have completely turned into another person.
She had never seen anything stranger.

"Is this Yang Fan also a disguised person?"
It could not be!
Others' head would never be as big as his, his smile would never look as repugnant.

Liu FengGu folded his arms while looking, he appeared very happy and satisfied with himself. Then he said, "Miss Tian wants you to chat with me."

Yang Fan said, "To discuss what?"

Liu FengGu said, "About her."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "What has to be discussed about her?"

Liu FengGu said, "I want her to marry me, but she actually said that she wants you to agree first."

Yang Fan said, "She wants me to agree?"

He seemed to think that this was very funny, he suddenly laughed and said, "Am I her father that she wants me to agree first?"

Liu FengGu said, "Because she says that she must marry you."

Yang Fan said, "I have already said, even if all the women in the world were dead, I still would not dare to marry her."

Liu FengGu said, "What did she say?"

Yang Fan said, "She said if all the men in the world were dead, she still could not marry me."

Then he turned around to Tian SiSi and said, "Isn't that what you said?"

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, her whole body was shaking incessantly.

She was so mad she could not say anything.

She only wished she could pound this big head into a watermelon pulp.

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "Since you have said so, it looks like our wedding will no longer be in question."

Yang Fan said, "There should not be any question since the beginning."

Liu FengGu laughed and said, "Good, very good, when the time comes I will certainly ask you to drink in celebration."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "I will protest if you have not asked me."

Liu FengGu laughed and embraced his shoulder.

Up until now, Tian SiSi still stood there like an idiot, but she could already ascertain that these two people were not strangers.

However she could not bear asking, “You are friends with each other?”

Yang Fan said, “No, we are not friends

Liu FengGu was smiling as he continued, “We are only brothers, the best of brothers.”

Tian SiSi’s lips moved for some time before she could say, “You have planned this from the beginning until the end?”

Yang Fan said easily, “He has said a moment ago that we are good brothers.”

Tian SiSi was staring at him, before she suddenly screamed, “Surname Yang, Yang Fan, are you actually a person? What kind of a thing are you?”

Yang Fan said with a smile, “Yang Fan is originally not a thing.”

Liu FengGu had also smiled and said, “You think that his real surname is Yang, and he is really called Yang Fan?”

Tian SiSi felt as if someone had suddenly whipped her, she could not help taking a few steps backward as she dropped to sitting on the coffin.

She was like a person who was quickly drowning to death, she could only grip the floating plank with great difficulty, but she suddenly discovered that she was not gripping a plank, but an alligator, an alligator which could eat a person.

Now she just felt like she was sinking slowly under the water.

After a very long time, she finally could say with a mute voice, "You are not Yang Fan?"

Yang Fan said, "Luckily I am not."

Tian SiSi said, "The real Yang Fan?"

Yang Fan said, "In Shaolin Temple."

Tian SiSi said, "What is he doing in Shaolin Temple?"

Yang Fan said, "Chanting the scripture, knocking the drum."

Tian SiSi said, "HeHe is a monk?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Now he might have possibly become a senior monk."

Tian SiSi nodded slowly while muttering, "I finally have understood"

She had really understood?

Perhaps she indeed had understood a lot, but there were some other matters that she could have never imagined even in her dreams.

END OF CHAPTER 29

Chapter 30: Dead Ends

One

Tian SiSi sat on the coffin although she wished she could hide inside it instead.

She thought that she would be able to wail loudly to expiate her feeling but she could not even shed her tears.

Couldn't she force the tears to come? A person without hope and without tears was a person in total despair, although the flowing tears were painful, not being able to cry was even more fearful.

But the way she looked now was very peaceful, very tranquil.

Liu FengGu's eyes never wavered from her, "You have said that you will not renege on your promise."

Tian SiSi said without thinking, "Yes, I said so."

Liu FengGu said, "You agree to marry me?"

Tian SiSi said, "I have promised you, onlyI must ask you something."

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "As long as you are happy, you can ask 1000 questions."

Tian SiSi said, "I only want to ask you, why do want me to marry you? There are many other girls in the world."

Liu FengGu said, "Although there are many women, there is only one Tian SiSi."

Tian SiSi said, "I must know the truth, now what else do you fear? Why aren't you willing to tell me the truth?"

Liu FengGu said, "Because the truth is not that pleasant to hear."

Tian SiSi said, "I want to know."

Liu FengGu hesitated before saying, "Do you know who is the world's richest person?"

Tian SiSi said, "Who?"

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "It is you, presently the world's richest person is you."

Tian SiSi sat there for a while before saying slowly, "You must marry me, not for myself, but for my money."

Liu FengGu sighed and said, "I have already said that the truth is not as touching as the lie."

Tian SiSi said, "Why don't you simply kill me and rob the money, isn't that a lot more convenient?"

Liu FengGu said, "That will cause trouble."

Tian SiSi said, "How can it be trouble?"

Liu FengGu said, "Do you know how many family properties do you have?"

Tian SiSi said, "I do not know."

Liu FengGu said, "But I actually have investigated very clearly, in each province and in each big or small city, you have family businesses in those places. If I were to grab them one by one, I would still be doing that until my beard has turned white."

He smiled as he continued, "But if I were Lady Tian's husband, wouldn't I be automatically the business manager

of the whole properties. If unfortunately you were to accidentally die, all the family business would logically be turned over to the person surnamed Liu.”

Tian SiSi nodded slowly and said, “This method is indeed a lot more convenient.”

Liu FengGu said, “Now you have finally understood.”

Tian SiSi said, “Actually I should have understood this before.”

Liu FengGu said, “But you have not thought of this truth before, because this truth is really too simple. The most wonderful thing is, the simpler the truth, the more often people could not understand it.”

Tian SiSi said, “I still have something I do not understand.”

Liu Fenggu said, “You say it.”

Tian SiSi said, “Since you want me to agree to marry you, why did you pretend for Yang Fan to rescue me? “

Liu FengGu said, “Because I originally wanted you to marry him.”

Tian SiSi sneered, “You thought I would marry him?”

Liu FengGu said, “A lot of women want to repay their debt of being rescued by marrying the man who rescued her.”

Tian SiSi said, “Therefore you make several opportunities for him to rescue me?”

Liu FengGu said with a smile, “Although this method has been used many times before, it is still pretty effective.”

Tian SiSi said, "Why didn't you pick someone else, and chose this pig instead?"

Liu FengGu said, "Because he is my brother, if he were rich, then I would be rich as well."

Tian SiSi said, "Why don't you think of a way to make me feel grateful to you and then marry you, wouldn't that be a lot simpler?"

Liu FengGu said lightly, "A person like me would prefer the situation where I do not have to show myself. You might not understand this, but you will slowly understand."

Tian SiSi coldly said, "Perhaps I have already understood now."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "If you do not show yourself, if the proposition falls through, you are not really involved, therefore you are still the Chiangnan's hero, and no one will find out about your involvement."

She sneered suddenly and said, "But I have actually found out your problem, your problem is that you are too smart for your own good."

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "I guess you are not that stupid."

Tian SiSi said, "Now you have actually shown your own hands."

Liu FengGu said, "Right."

Tian SiSi said, "Why have you changed your mind?"

Liu FengGu said, "First, because I thought you disliked my brother so much that you would not be willing to marry him. Second, because I am anxious to get the money now for my use, I don't have the time to play tricks on you anymore."

Tian SiSi said, "Therefore you have decided to tell me the truth?"

Liu FengGu said, "Now regardless of what I say, there is no more problem."

Tian SiSi said, "Now actually what do you want to do?"

Liu FengGu said, "We must certainly return to the Tian village first to get married, moreover we also must have Second Master Tian personally bless this wedding."

Tian SiSi said, "Which Second Master Tian?"

Liu FengGu smiled and said, "Certainly the one that you saw a moment ago."

Tian SiSi said, "Then?"

Liu FengGu said, "When everyone in jiang-hu has all acknowledged me as the son-in-law of the Tian's family, this Second Master Tian can die of old age peacefully in bed."

Tian SiSi said, "And then not long after that, I will also unfortunately die of illness."

Liu FengGu said lightly, "The young girl is ill-fated, an intelligent and attractive girl sometimes cannot live a long life."

Tian SiSi said, "Then all the Tian family's properties will belong to the surnamed Liu."

Liu FengGu said lightly, "But I will never forget the way the Tian family has adopted me, therefore every spring and fall, I will offer a sacrifice of prayer, and I will certainly shed some tears on the Tian family's graves."

Tian SiSi sighed and said, "You are indeed very thorough in your preparation, but it is only a pity that you have forgotten something."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "Since you have told me the truth, how can I still willingly marry you?"

Liu FengGu said, "Didn't you promise me already?"

Tian SiSi said, "You can treat what I said earlier about agreeing to marry you as a nonsense."

Liu FengGu laughed suddenly and said, "You think I have not really thought of this? Liu FengGu's quick-witted, unparalleled, foolproof plan, this reputation is not that easy to get."

Tian SiSi said, "YouYou can compel me to marry you, but you absolutely cannot force me, in front of the big crowd of people, to bow to Heaven and Earth with you to get married, you should just forget about it even in your dream!"

Liu FengGu said, "I always do not like having a dream."

Tian SiSi said, "Do you have the method to force me to change my mind?"

Liu FengGu said, "I have no need to force you to change your mind, as long as I will not let you interfere, that should be fine."

Tian SiSi said, "But my legs belong to my body, how can you force me to bow to heaven and earth with you?"

Liu FengGu said, "But I may use others legs actually to replace your legs, when the new bride walks, won't other people also support her?"

Tian SiSi had debated this throughout anxiously, fueled with her anger.

If a person did not have anything to rely on, often she would become unreasonably strong.

But her tears eventually must drop down.

She nipped her lips, after a very long time, she blurted out, "Although I know that you can say those things, you actually will not be able to really do those things."

Liu FengGu said, "You do not believe that I am such a person who can deliver on what I say?"

Tian SiSi said, "But you must have certainly realized how all of this will incite others' suspicion, otherwise you would have already done it. You went around and around to get me, why would you wait until now to do this?"

Liu FengGu said, "Right, Second Master Tian' friends are a lot, by my status, no one should certainly suspect me, therefore first I must certainly find someone who can replace you to speak in the wedding."

Tian SiSi said, "Nobody else can speak for me."

Liu FengGu said, "There is someone, I guarantee you that if she speaks for you, no one will disbelieve her."

Tian SiSi said, "Have you found such a person?"

Liu FengGu said, “You do not believe me?”

Tian SiSi said, “YouWhom do you find?”

She really had no need to say this, because she had seen Zhang Haoer entering the room holding a person's hand.

She never could believe that this person could betray her. She would rather die than to believe it, but she had no alternative but to believe it actually.

Tian Xin.

She had finally seen Tian Xin.

Two

Tian Xin was smiling sweetly, holding Zhang Haoer's hand, just like when she was pulling Tian SiSi's hand before.

She still looked very clever, and yet so naive.

She even had not shown any ashamed look.

Tian SiSi originally liked her smiles a lot, but the most that she liked was looking at her pouty smiles. Sometimes she also seemed very experienced, very sensible, but at times she would smile like a baby.

Babies were always lovable.

Now she was smiling positively like a baby.

But Tian SiSi luckily had not actually seen her smile, otherwise perhaps she would immediately get incensed.

Although she stared ahead with big eyes, she really could not see anything.

Even when Liu FengGu spoke to her, it was as if she was listening from a faraway place.

Liu FengGu was asking Tian Xin, “How we should handle this matter, have you completely understood?”

Tian Xin sweetly said, "What elder sister Zhang said a moment ago, I have not forgotten a single word."

Liu FengGu said, "What did she say?"

Tian Xin said, "Tomorrow evening, I will accompany the master and the young lady home, on that occasion people will have already slept. Therefore we may slip in secretly into the house from the back door."

Liu FengGu said, "Why do we have to slip in secretly?"

Tian Xin said, "Because the young lady cannot say anything or walk properly, therefore no one should see her like that."

Liu FengGu said, "On the next days, why wouldn't she show up to play in the garden?"

Tian Xin said, "I would say that the young lady feels embarrassed, therefore she would not see anyone."

Liu FengGu said, "Why should she feel embarrassed?"

Tian Xin said, "Because four days from now will be the young lady's great happiness day, a person who will become a new bride, will always feel embarrassed!"

Liu FengGu said, "Why does the marriage celebration has to be conducted so hurriedly?"

Tian Xin said, "Because Second Master Tian has gotten sick, he must prevent any possible further bad luck by arranging for this happy event."

Liu FengGu said, "How could Second Master Tian get sick so suddenly?"

Tian Xin said, "He suffered a heat-stroke on the road, compounded with his chronic illness, therefore he was heavily sick."

Liu FengGu said, "Because he is heavily sick, therefore he must arrange for this joyous occasion for the young lady, this old person's idea is rooted by this cause."

Tian Xin said, "Also because he is heavily sick, therefore he cannot leave the room to receive guests, even if some old friends have come, they will only be able to sit in his room."

Liu FengGu said, "Anything else?"

Tian Xin said, "A patient certainly should not catch a chill again, therefore the windows in his room is closed tight, coupled with covered window blinds

."

Liu Fenggu said, "They must be very thick window blinds."

Tian Xin said, "The patient already cannot sit, also cannot speak, at most he can only lie down on the bed and greet his friends. Moreover, since the marriage celebration is arranged in a big hurry, not many friends can be contacted."

Liu FengGu said, "The less the better, as long as some people can speak about the event, that will be fine."

Tian Xin said, "I have jotted down the list of the invitees and have given it to the elder sister a moment ago."

Liu FengGu showed his satisfaction and said, "Then?"

Tian Xin said, "Then when the great happiness day arrives, Zhang Haoer and Madam Wang are going to be the happy mothers, they are responsible for dressing up the new

bride, and will hold up together the new bride with me to bow to Heaven and Earth.”

Liu FengGu said, “Then?”

Tian Xin said with a smile, “Then when the new bride has entered the marriage chamber, it will no longer be our problem.”

Liu FengGu laughed and said, “Then when this matter has been completed, I might supply you with my brother's marriage celebration, that will be the true marriage celebration.”

Tian Xin blushing lowered her head, but sneaked a secret glance at Yang Fan, her eyes were filled with sentimental feelings.

Had she really fallen for this big-headed ghost?

Had she betrayed Tian SiSi to get him?

There were many things in the world that seemed too absurd, too strange to be imagined or to be believed.

Everyone was smiling.

Each of them had reasons to smile, although not necessarily to laugh.

In any case, Tian SiSi had not heard their laughter.

She seemed to have dropped into some cold water a moment ago, but now this water had started to form the ice at the top.

She felt her body get chilled to the bone.

“Yang Fan, you are good, Tian Xin, you are good, you two people are both good.”

She really wanted to laugh, laugh at herself for treating these two people as her friends.

And not just friends, but really parts of her life.

But now? Now, anything else in this world was no longer her problems.

She suddenly found herself lonely in this world, no family and no friends.

But perhaps there was someone!

Qin Ge!

Qin Ge would not collaborate with these low, shameless people, otherwise why did they hatched that plan to frame him?

But where was he? Was he thinking of a way to save her?

This was Tian SiSi final reason to hope, as long as she could hear about Qin Ge now, she would not spare any sacrifice at any price.

At this moment, she suddenly heard Liu FengGu ask Yang Fan, "Qin Ge? You have not brought him here?"

Yang Fan smiled and said, "If not for bringing him here, how could I have come so late?"

Liu FengGu also smiled and said, "How is he? Is he really very difficult to cope with?"

Yang Fan said, "If a person has suffered 500-600 sabre cuts, he is not easy to deal with!"

Liu FengGu said, "Why didn't you leave him to the monk from the Shaolin Temple? Why did you have to expend your own strength?"

Yang Fan said, "This person really likes to meddle in other people's business, if I have kept him outside, I would not have felt relieved."

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "It looks like you work even more careful than me, no wonder other people say that a big-headed person always yields a thorough result."

Yang Fan smiled and said, "I have left him behind to our guards outside, but now I should bring him in?"

Liu FengGu said, "Fine, bring him in."

Thereupon Tian SiSi would see Qin Ge.

But now she would have sacrificed anything rather than to see Qin Ge appear like that.

Three

Qin Ge came in lifted by two people, a person holding his body, a person lifting up his legs, as if lifting a dead person.

A dead person at least was stiff, with bones inside it.

But Qin Ge seemed to be completely weak, as soft as the beach sands.

Others just held him up, as if he might turn into flowing soft mud.

When he was drunk, he seemed to look a little like this too.

But he was now actually very sober, not even the slightest tipsy feeling, only full of anger and hatred.

Liu FengGu sighed and said, "Actually how did you cope with him? How could you make him become like this? "

Yang Fan said lightly, "Nothing really special, I just use a couple of fingers to knock on him several times."

Liu FengGu frowned, "Before, he suffered five hundred sabre cuts just fine, but now he could not withstand your fingers?"

Yang Fan said, "Before he was a pauper, a poor person's bones were always especially hard."

Liu FengGu said, "Now?"

Yang Fan said, "As soon as a person becomes famous, he also becomes different. Anyone who indulges in the life of dissipation all year, even if he was an iron man before, his body would still become porous."

Zhang Haoer also sighed and said, "Move the chair quickly and hold up Hero Qin to sit. It is cold and wet on the floor, if Hero Qin accidentally catches the cold, who will take the responsibility?"

These two people immediately propped the chair with Qin Ge on it solicitously, giving him a very sad appearance.

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth, really wishing she could run over and slap their faces a few times.

Although the chair was very spacious, Qin Ge sat unsteadily, as if he could slip off easily.

Liu FengGu walked closer and smilingly said, "Brother Qin, I have not seen you for many years. I want to urge Brother Qin to take care of your own body, although wine and women are very attractive, they cannot be consumed daily like food."

Qin Ge looked at him and spit at him.

Liu FengGu had not moved at all, he had not put up his hand to wipe it away, and yet he still smiled at him. How many people in the world could really withhold himself when someone had spit at him?

Qin Ge suddenly laughed and said, "I really admire you, your really have tight self-control, you are not really an

individual, I only feel strange how your mother could have given birth to you?"

Liu FengGu was also looking at him, after a while he turned to Yang Fan and said, "You understand what he is trying to do?"

Yang Fan nodded and said, "He wants you to kill him quickly."

Liu FengGu said lightly, "Now that Shaolin Temple has known him as the murderer of the meddlesome monk, whether he lives or dies, it is no longer any problem."

Yang Fan said, "But you cannot kill him very quickly."

Liu FengGu said, "Certainly. Before he dies, I still want to know something very much. Besides him, no one else can tell me, how can he die so quickly?"

Yang Fan said, "What matter do you want to know?"

Liu FengGu said, "I want to know how many sabre slashes can he suffer?"

Yang Fan said, "Can you guess?"

Liu FengGu said, "At least 120 slashes."

Yang Fan said, "Nobody can suffer 120 slashes."

Liu FengGu instead had smiled suddenly and said, "Do you bet?"

Yang Fan said, "What kind of a bet?"

Liu FengGu said, "If somebody strikes him with a sabre for 119 times and he dies, then I lose the bet."

Yang Fan said, "That depends on how strong you will strike him?"

Liu FengGu said, "Like this."
He swung suddenly at Qin Ge's leg.

Qin Ge's face wrinkled and suddenly said with a smile, "This sabre cut is rather too light, even if I were to suffer 300-500 sabre slashes, that will not matter."

Liu FengGu said easily, "If Brother Qin wants to suffer many sabre slashes, I will not disappoint you."

Tian SiSi suddenly said loudly, "I will bet with you."

Liu FengGu had smiled and said, "You want to bet with me? What kind of a bet?"

Tian SiSi clenched her teeth said, "I bet you do not dare to kill him with one stroke of your sabre."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Tian SiSi said, "If I lose, II am willing to marry you, you have no need to play anymore tricks for the marriage."

Liu FengGu was smiling and said, "This gambling stake is actually very big, I should consider this carefully."

Tian Xin suddenly curled her lips and sweetly said, "Our young lady's feelings are very generous, she is afraid that Young Master Qin will suffer hardship under the sabre slashes, therefore she devises this method. Since sooner or later everyone must die, suffering one slash is better than many slashes."

She smiled naively and then said, "Nobody else knows more about the young lady's regard other than me."

Liu FengGu said, "What else do you also know?"

Tian Xin said with a smile, "Although I know the young lady's feelings well, but it changes extremely quickly, sometimes she really wanted to eat the candied lotus seeds, but when I came with it, she no longer wanted it, instead she wanted to eat the lantern festival day snacks."

She blinked and also said with a smile, "Therefore regardless of what the young lady said, you just listen to her nicely, but do not make earnest on it, do not make a bet with her, because if she loses, she will not follow through with it."

Tian SiSi was staring at her, her eyes seemed to spit fire at her.

Immediately Tian Xin turned to her and said, "I am just saying the truth, the young lady should not feel angry."

Tian SiSi said with a smile suddenly, "You can rest assure that although I am mad at the bastard, I am not mad at you."

Tian Xin dangled her head and said softly, "I know that the young lady detests me in your heart, but I also have my hardship."

Tian SiSi said, "Oh?"

Tian Xin said, "I have been a servant girl since birth, you are the young lady since birth, my hardship, you certainly cannot understand, if an individual serves as the servant girl, she will turn into a block of wood, she will not have any joy or pain."

She sighed, then said, "The young lady is actually a person, the servant girl is also a person, nobody is willing to

be the servant girl for a lifetime.”

Tian SiSi’s body trembled and said, “IWhen have I treated you like a servant girl? Say it!”

Tian Xin said, “Regardless of how the young lady treated me, I am always your servant girl.”

Tian SiSi said, “Therefore you wanted to harm me?”

Tian Xin dangled her head and said, “If the young lady were in my situation, you would probably do the same thing.”

Tian SiSi also sighed suddenly and said, “Good, I am not blaming you, but I also have something to say to you.”

Tian Xin said, “I am listening.”

Tian SiSi said, “You come here, no one else can hear this.”

Tian Xin lowered her head and walked slowly.

Tian SiSi said, “Come closer, good”

She suddenly expended her whole strength to slap Tian Xin’s face.

Then she dropped down and wept bitterly loudly.

She really had endured patiently for a long time, she still wanted to continue to endure patiently, but at this last straw, she could not help but collapse.

She no longer had hopes, not even the last ray of hope.

If a person were in total despair, she could no longer support herself, because what was the purpose?

If the life were a road, her road would no longer exist.

She had met dead ends.

END OF CHAPTER 30

Chapter 31: Asking the Gentleman to Enter the Coffin

One

In the world did dead ends really exist?

As long as there was the road, people could still walk away.

As long as a person did not have to really enter the coffin, he would still have hope – even without the road, you could still make your own way.

Tian SiSi dropped besides the coffin.

She was not in the coffin, but she was really too close to it.

Two

The secret room had suddenly become very quiet, not because they wanted to listen to Tian SiSi's weeping sound, but because they had suddenly heard a very strange sound of footsteps above. The sound of footsteps was heard from above, from Fan Yin Temple.

Fan Yin Temple was a temple, so to hear someone walk inside the temple was not a very strange matter. But what was strange was that these footsteps were really heavy. Even if there were ten tall giants were walking above, they would not produce such loud sounds of footsteps.

Everyone was listening to the slow rhythmic sound of footsteps walking slowly.

Liu FengGu suddenly said, "Master Wu Se has come."

Madam Wang looked pale as a ghost and said, "How do you know that he has come?"

Liu FengGu coldly said, "Besides this senior monk, who else could walk with such deep endogenic force?"

Yang Fan said, "There are three people who have come."

Madam Wang said, "Three people?"

Liu FengGu nodded and said, "The other two people's footsteps are too light, you cannot hear them."

Zhang Haoer said, "What is this senior monk doing, circling above us?"

Liu FengGu sneered, "He is giving us a demonstration."

Zhang Haoer changed countenance and said, "If so, does he know already that there are people down here?"

Yang Fan nodded and said, "But he has not actually discovered the way to come down."

Zhang Haoer said, "But he will know it sooner or later?"

Madam Wang said, "Since he already knows that there are people down here, if he cannot find us, how is he willing to leave?"

Zhang Haoer smiled reluctantly and said, "Luckily the golden beard and others will no longer be able to open their mouths, there are no more witnesses."

Madam Wang said, "But if he sees us down here, he will get suspicious."

Zhang Haoer said, "Then we should leave this place as quickly as possible."

Yang Fan suddenly said, "We cannot leave!"

Zhang Haoer said, "Why?"

Yang Fan with a calm face said, "We cannot leave, that means we cannot leave."

Zhang Haoer said, "So we just wait for him here?"

Yang Fan said, "We also do not need to wait."

Zhang Haoer said, "Since we cannot leave, and we should not wait, tell us what you will do."

Yang Fan said, "I will find him."

Madam Wang blurted out, "You will find him? Are you insane?"

Yang Fan said, "Since he has found this place, he must be suspicious of something. Until he find the answer, he will not drop this matter easily, therefore..."

Zhang Haoer interrupted, "Therefore what?"

Yang Fan said, "Therefore we cannot stop at this point, we should just continue with him..."

Madam Wang also interjected, "Do you also want to kill him to eliminate a witness?"

Yang Fan said lightly, "We have killed a monk, a monk is not someone whom we cannot kill."

Zhang Haoer said, "The question is, who will kill him?"

Yang Fan said, "I will."

Zhang Haoer stared at him with big eyes and said, "You? You are not afraid of his Luo Han crouching tiger fist?"

Yang Fan smiled and said, "I am not a tiger, why do I have to fear his crouching tiger fist?"

Zhang Haoer sighed, turned to Liu FengGu and said, "Do you think he is insane?"

Liu FengGu said lightly, "He is not insane, even if all the people in the world have become insane, he is still not insane."

The sounds of the footsteps above were still chiming, Yang Fan had strode out.

Zhang Haoer sighed and muttered, "I only hope that he will not turn into a toothless tiger."

Liu FengGu smiled suddenly and said easily, "Even if he dies, I do not want you to die with him, why are you so anxious?"

The sound of footsteps had suddenly stopped.

Zhang Haoer gently sighed and said, "Now he has already come up, that senior monk has also seen him."

Madam Wang said, "Since that senior monk does not know him, he certainly will not know what he is doing."

Zhang Haoer said, "Therefore the senior monk will certainly ask him now, who are you? What do you want?"

Madam Wang said, "Can he say, I am here to kill you?"

Zhang Haoer said, "He cannot, he is not a pig, how can he let that senior monk be on alert first."

Madam Wang nodded and said, "Right, he must certainly wait until that senior monk's guard be lowered, then his opportunity to win will be quite big."

Zhang Haoer said, "Even if the first strike does not go well, at least he will have the initiative."

Madam Wang said, "Therefore, he will certainly converse with that senior monk!"

Zhang Haoer said, "Depending on how smooth he talks, he can certainly cause some confusion in the senior monk."

Madam Wang had also smiled and said, "Have you also been confused by him?"

Zhang Haoer said, "Are you being jealous?"

She pulled Tian Xin's hand and said with a smile, "Now it's not your turn to be jealous."

Tian Xin stared ahead continuously, not listening to them speak, as if she was listening intently to the sound above.

She seemed to really care about Yang Fan more than anyone else.

Tian SiSi?

Did she really hope that Yang Fan would be an easy mark for Master Wu Se and be pounded like a watermelon pulp?

Tian Xin suddenly said, "You listen, they seemed to start fighting."

Actually there was no need for her to say anything, others could also hear.

By now the sounds of footsteps had resounded again solemnly above, even louder than a moment ago. The footsteps were very quick, but they actually only treaded on several fixed places.

It was said that a Shao Lin eminent monk who had truly attained the Luo Han crouching tiger fist, when he fought

with his fists in the snowy area, he would at most leave behind only seven footprints in the snowy area.

Madam Wang said, "It looks like that senior monk is really using the Luo Han crouching tiger fist to cope with him."

Zhang Haoer sighed and said, "Therefore, he has not been able to strike back."

Madam Wang sighed, "It looks like this senior monk really has some skill, to cope with him is really not easy."

The sound of footsteps above became more complicated, louder, as if the fighters were expending their whole strength now.

Zhang Haoer smiled suddenly and said, "But he is also not easy to cope with, otherwise how can this senior monk use such vigorous moves."

The sound of footsteps made seven very quick steps, as if hammering the drum loudly.

Liu FengGu's complexion also became very solemn, he said, "This must be 'the wind and thunder working together'."

"The wind and thunder workgi together" was precisely one of the most overbearing move in the crouching tiger fist, moreover the move has countless, various changes.

With Master Wu Se's skill level, not many people could avoid this attacking move.

But Yang Fan obviously had avoided this move.

Among the noises above, there was no sound of anyone dropping down.

Also for some unknown reason, Tian SiSi secretly relaxed—she unexpectedly had not hoped Yang Fan to die faster?

A girl's emotion was, really really difficult to ascertain.
But why was it any different than men's emotion?
Nobody in the could really control his or her own sentiment, just like nobody could really control the weather.

Zhang Haoer had also relaxed and said, "It looks like this senior monk's 'the wind and thunder working together' has not tripped him."

Liu FengGu calmly said, "He has indeed avoided this move."

Zhang Haoer said, "I really want to come up to have a look, what is he using to cope with that senior monk?"

Liu FengGu said, "Up to the present, he has not attacked even once."

Zhang Haoer said, "Did he only come under attack, and never hit back?"

Liu FengGu said, "Precisely."

Zhang Haoer said, "Why on earth is he fighting like this?"

Liu FengGu said, "This is the most formidable fighting method, he only uses this method to cope with Master Wu Se."

Zhang Haoer said, "You know why he is fighting like this?"

Liu FengGu nodded and said, "Now he is abiding his time by using 'Eight sides of you-shen-zhang' lightness moves to tempt Master Wu Se to assault him with all his strength.

After Master Wu Se's energy is consumed, only then he will attack."

Zhang Haoer blinked and said, "I understand now, no matter how strong Master Wu Se is, he is already an old man after all, his physical strength is always inferior to the young people."

Liu FengGu said, "Moreover the Luo Han crouching tiger fist is a very vigorous, strength-exhausting moves, therefore it consumes a lot of real strength. Someone who can fight with the 108 fist moves of crouching tigers while also speaking is already a rare master."

Zhang Haoer said, "But he is not an apprentice of 'Eight sides clan', how can he move with that 'Eight sides of you-shen-zhang' move?"

Liu FengGu said, "This person's wugong is very mixed"

He looked pensive before saying slowly, "He is a very good helper, very useful, since I need this kind of person very much, why do I need to investigate his origin?"

Zhang Haoer rotated her eyes and said with a smile, "Who are you saying this to?"

Liu FengGu said lightly, "To myself."

Madam Wang suddenly said, "I actually have never understood how you can be good friends with him?"

Liu FengGu coldly said, "I have said that I need him very much, he also needs me very much."

Madam Wang said, "Why does he need you?"

Liu FengGu said, "It is said that he has made several big cases outside the border, he has offended a lot of masters, therefore he can only run away to Chiangnan."

Madam Wang said, "You have investigated this?"

Liu FengGu coldly said, "You think I would casually trust a person?"

Madam Wang said, "But you have not completely trusted him, you did not let him know about a lot of matters."

Liu FengGu smiled suddenly and said, "You think you know everything?"

He smiled very kindly, very naturally.

But Madam Wang's face had become white, she could not say anything.

Zhang Haoer also said with a smile, "I also have something I do not understand."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Zhang Haoer continued, "His head is so big, his belly is not small, how can he have such good levitation skill? Maybe because his bone is too light"

Her laughter stopped suddenly as Liu FengGu exclaimed, "This is 'the crouching tiger strikes awe' move!"

At this moment, a person had suddenly fallen from above, right by chance into that coffin.

The coffin was only partially covered.

This person could fall directly into the coffin, because his body was really too thin, too slight.

Even if the coffin covers had covered a little more space, he could still fall in the same way.

After he entered the coffin, he was likely a dead person, he did not make any move.

This person was certainly not Yang Fan.

His head was big, his belly was not small, he would have trouble fitting into an even a bigger coffin.

So the person who fell down was Master Wu Se.

The crouching tiger strikes awe was precisely the last move of 108 Luo Han crouching tiger fist!

This move had just put been put forth, Master Wu Se had fallen down.

He could not even say anything.

Then Yang Fan dropped lightly from above.

He should be at least ten catty heavy, but when he fell down, he seemed to fall like a fluff of cotton.

Were his bones really wonderfully light?

Even if his bones were really light, there were more than a few of them, and yet they had made it back completely intact.

Tian SiSi shut her eyes.

She never wanted to see this person again, never think of him anymore!

But when he had not come back a moment ago, why did she have to worry for him?

He was obviously a mean shameless person, who had deceived and harmed her.

Master Wu Se was obviously an honest chivalrous eminent monk.

So why in her heart she had hoped that he would be defeated?

Tian SiSi shut her eyes, and yet she could actually imagine how this big-headed ghost would appear at present. Now he was certainly cocky. Complacent. Who should not feel satisfied with himself now?

Everyone had been defeated including Master Wu Se. Their plot would be of great success soon, there was nothing that would hinder them.

Tian SiSi before had also listened to many stories of evil persons and evil plots. No matter how complex was the plot, afterwards it would always be revealed by someone, and be thoroughly defeated.

The good and honest side, sooner or later, would always prevail.

But at present, when she experienced this bitter experience, unexpectedly she had suffered a completely different story.

Now the evil people had triumphed, the evil plot had prevailed, the good people were instead cast aside towards the pitiful dark hell.

Tian SiSi really hated, not not just herself, but also these mean shameless evil people and the whole world.

There was no justice in this world.

Yang Fan had really the cocky, complacent appearance. He had his reason to be satisfied with himself.

Liu FengGu walked to him and patted his shoulder, "Good brother, you really have real skills, this fight was really interesting."

Yang Fan said lightly, "Not really."

Zhang Haoer interjected, "Who said so? Who else in jiang-hu can defeat the Shao Lin's law protector?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "Actually his skills were indeed much deeper than mine, I only had some luck."

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "That was not luck, you employed your strategy successfully."

Zhang Haoer excitedly said, "Actually how did you manage to overthrow him?"

Yang Fan said, "Shao Lin's Luo Han crouching tiger fist has gone through more than ten generations of Shao Lin monks' revisions. The improvements have made these moves almost impregnable. I also knew that when he displayed these fist moves, it would be impossible for me to attack him back, therefore"

Madam Wang also could not bear asking, "Therefore?"

Yang Fan said, "Therefore I only waited, waited for him to hit the last move of the 108 moves, and while he was still taking a breath changing the moves, I suddenly spent my whole strength to attack him."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "You have really overthrown him all of a sudden."

Liu FengGu said, "Talking about this, everything seemed easy, but actually it was not simple at all. One must find a way to evade Master Wu Se's 108 moves of crouching tigers fist, moreover one must find the exact moment when he takes his breath, and then just let go in one flow his whole strength, because if one misses this kind of opportunity, it will never come again."

Madam Wang also asked suddenly, "Those two lesser monks?"

Yang Fanwei said with a smile, "Those two are not the lesser monks, they also have good standings in Shaolin Temple."

Madam Wang said, "You have also certainly tidied them up."

Yang Fan said, "No."

Madam Wang, "No? You"

Yang Fan said, "They left."

Madam Wang said in consternation, "How can you let them leave?"

Yang Fan said, "I let them leave."

Madam Wang said, "Why?"

Yang Fan smiled and said, "Because I must let them go back and tell the Shaolin Temple disciples, in whose hand the meddlesome monk has died."

Madam Wang thought and then sweetly said, "The big headed person thinks clearer than anyone else."

Qin Ge sitting paralyzed on the chair, at this moment suddenly said, "You framed me because you were afraid that Tian SiSi would marry me?"

Liu FengGu said, "Not only for this reason."

Qin Ge said, "What else?"

Liu FengGu said, "The meddlesome monk was really too meddlesome, I have wanted to remove him since long ago!"

Qin Ge said, "But you were afraid of the retaliation by the Shaolin Temple's disciples?"

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "Now I indeed do not want to conflict with the Shaolin Temple directly. In several years, the situation will perhaps be different."

Qin Ge said, "Therefore you must find a scapegoat?"

Liu FengGu said with a smile, "Actually I do not have any deep hatred to you, only at that time I could not find a better scapegoat, therefore I had to use you."

Qin Ge sneered, "You actually already felt deep hatred towards me."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Qin Ge said, "Because my name rose up suddenly, in these two years my reputation has made louder clap compared to you, you already regarded me as the thorn in your side, sooner or later you would find a way to tidy me up. This idea could serve two purposes in one shot, removing two thorns in your side at one go."

Liu FengGu said easily, "Since you want to think of it that way, I also will not deny it."

Qin Ge said, "Now I am only asking you, who killed the meddlesome monk?"

Liu FengGu said, "Can you guess?"

Qin Ge said, "You! Certainly it's you!"

Liu FengGu said, "You saw it?"

Qin Ge said, "Although I have not seen it, but I actually knew that at the time the meddlesome monk fell down from the vane, you have waited down under to hit him with the fatal fist even before he came to a stop."

Liu FengGu said, "Then?"

Qin Ge said, "Then you brought his corpse from the tunnel to that secret room."

Liu FengGu said, "Why did I do that?"

Qin Ge said, "Because you have to manage the time before you tempted us to enter that secret room. From that time until we came out, you also took care to make sure that there would be a lively gambling establishment outside."

Liu FengGu calmly said, "Continue."

Qin Ge said, "Simultaneously you intentionally leaked the news to Master Wu Se, so he would rush to the gambling establishment at that time."

Liu FengGu said, "How did I know that he would rush there promptly?"

Qin Ge said, "Because the meddlesome monk is Master Wu Se's younger fellow, they practiced martial arts together since their childhood, both of them have emotional ties like actual brothers. If Master Wu Se knew that his younger fellow was in danger, then he would certainly hurry to the place regardless of the consequences."

Liu FengGu said, "What else?"

Qin Ge said, "In order for you to let Master Wu Se see the situation with his own eyes, everything had to timed

perfectly, moreover you had already bought one group of people to constitute for the gamblers in the gambling establishment, then they would commit perjury in front of Master Wu Se.”

Liu FengGu said, “Then?”

Qin Ge said, “The people that were forced by the meddlesome monk to shave clean their heads, although some of them were your friends, but in order to execute this flawlessly, therefore you did not hesitate to kill them to eliminate any witnesses.”

Liu FengGu said, “Where did I kill them?”

Qin Ge said, “In here.”

He said slowly, “This Fan Yin temple is an ancient temple, it was completed before Emperor Liang-di slaughtered the monks. In order for the monks in this temple to evade the calamity, they had made many tunnels and duplicate walls here.”

Liu FengGu coldly said, “Continue your story.”

Qin Ge said, “Not only you can kill people here secretly, you can also find many places to bury them. It is also easy to find the dark place for ambush, therefore you want to use this place as the center of your operation.”

He sneered then said, “Therefore you little crowd of bulldogs and *****es had gathered here together and waited to eat the dog excretion.”

Liu FengGu coldly looked at him and said, “Anything else?”

Qin Ge said, “Now the dog excretion is almost depleted by you, I no longer have anything to say.”

Liu FengGu suddenly gave a long sigh and said, "I did not expect that you are actually a smart one, we have severely underestimated you."

Qin Ge said, "Actually did you kill the meddlesome monk?"

Liu FengGu said lightly, "I seldom kill people, if the meddlesome monk was not such an eminent monk, I would not have personally done it. "

He easily said, "I only kill famous people: an eminent monk, a hero, or a beautiful woman."

Qin Ge said, "How about me?"

Liu FengGu sneered, "You are not included."

Yang Fan suddenly said, "But you also do not need to worry, we will find someone appropriate to kill you."

Qin Ge sneered, "I prefer death. I would rather die than to look at this little crowd of hungry dogs."

Yang Fan was not angry and said with a smile lightly, "A hungry dog is always better than a dead dog."

Liu FengGu suddenly said, "Your wugong skills are very mixed, but did you also study the Shao Lin Pai's fist style?"

Yang Fan said with a smile, "A person who practices martial arts would sooner or later practice Shao Lin's fist style."

Shao Lin's disciples were indeed very common, although many people had practiced the Shaolin's fist style, but the ones who could obtain its essence are probably just ten people or so.

Liu FengGu said, "Since you have practiced the Shaolin's fist style, I will just give this task to you."

Yang Fan said, "What task?"

Liu FengGu said, "The last task."

He smiled then said, "You can use the Shaolin's fist style on Hero Qin's deadly accupoint, and use Hero Qin's sabre on Master Wu Se's throat, I will then ask someone to naturally deliver them to Songshan."

Zhang Haoer interjected, "I understand now, you must send them to the Shaolin Temple, so it will look like they have fought together and have perished together."

Madam Wang said with a smile, "Although Qin Ge has killed Master Wu Se, but Master Wu Se has finally revenged his fellow, henceforth this bloodbath has finally ended."

Zhang Haoer said, "Our plan is therefore a great success, we just need to wait to drink and celebrate."

Liu FengGu said easily with a smile, "Therefore I said that this last matter is also the easiest matter."

Yang Fan shook his head suddenly and said, "You are all mistaken."

Liu FengGu frowned and said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "It looks to me like this last matter is the most difficult task."

Zhang Haoer said, "Why is it difficult? Now to kill them, it will take only the slightest effort."

Yang Fan smiled lightly and said, "If you think it is very easy, why don't you kill them?"

Zhang Haoer winked her eyes and said, "If you are not willing to do it, it is no problem for me to do it."

She raised her pair of white hands and smiled, "You may think that my hands are only good for caressing a man's face, but they can also changed into something very hard, hard enough that you will not like to taste it!"

Yang Fan said, "Oh?"

Zhang Haoer said, "You do not believe me?"

She suddenly took out a spiky glove from her bosom, after wearing them in her white hands, she sweetly said, "Now, do you believe me? Do you want to try?"

Yang Fan laughed, "Since someone else wants to try it already, why should I interfere."

Zhang Haoer said with a smile, "You are not so stupid after all."

Liu FengGu had lowered his face and said suddenly, "Slow down."

Zhang Haoer said, "Do not take me lightly, I have also practice the Shao Lin Pai's fist style, if you do not believe me, see this move of 'crouching tiger strikes awe'."

She suddenly rushed to Qin Ge, lowered her legs like sitting on a saddle and then, "whoosh" her fist had shot out!

This fist was precisely the Shaolin's fist style attack, moreover it has enough strength behind it.

But this fist had not landed on Qin Ge's body.
Her hand was suddenly seized by Qin Ge!

Qin Ge who had looked as soft as the beach sands, had unexpectedly leaped up and became a strong person.

His hand was hard, as hard as his chest.

Zhang Haoer exhausted her strength trying to withdraw her hand, and then suddenly her foot had also flown forward.

Her foot was also seized.

Her face had become really pale.

Yang Fan sighed at last and said lightly, "I said that this would be the most difficult task, now you ought to believe me."

Liu FengGu coldly looked at him without any expression.

Tian SiSi was also looking on.

Actually she was not really clear how everything stood.

Then someone said sternly, "You would kill a famous eminent monk, a hero or a beautiful woman. But the one I kill is just an absurd person, a disobedient son, or a shameless villain, today I must break my vow against taking life!"

Master Wu Se.

Master Wu Se had unexpectedly also stood up from the coffin.

Although his stature was skinny and diminutive, he looked like a hundred feet tall giant.

Madam Wang's face realized that disaster was imminent, she suddenly turned around to escape.

Qin Ge raised Zhang Haoer's wrist, as her hand suddenly got released.

Zhang Haoer involuntarily flew forward and landed herself on Madam Wang's body, the two people crumpled together in one place.

Qin Ge said with a smile, "That is right, you are really good sisters, nobody should leave the other one."

Madam Wang was struggling up, she turned around and opened her mouth to bite on Zhang Haoer's ear.

Zhang Haoer shouted miserably and attacked her throat.

Madam Wang bent her leg and smashed it on Zhang Haoer's abdomen.

They were this kind of persons.

They could use each other, then they were good sisters. But when the going got tough, they turned into each other like mad dogs, if you did not bite me, then I would bite you.

They were this kind of inhuman persons.

Liu FengGu walked suddenly to them. He pulled up Zhang Haoer and slapped her back and forth several times. Then, he lifted up Madam Wang and also slapped her several times.

The two people were tussled in blood, but they did not dare to move at all.

Liu FengGu had turned around at last, then after a brief smile he said, "They really have no sense of shame, originally I did not want to involve them in this important matter, just something to be laughed at."

In this crucial moment, he could still suppress his anger.

Qin Ge gave a long sigh and said, "It looks like it is not easy to become a chivalrous person. Not only he has to have an evil heart and be a good behind-the-scenes manipulator, his facial skin has to be thicker than a normal person as well."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "But a chivalrous person does not always look like this. Not that many chivalrous persons

actually look like him.”

Liu FengGu said, “It looks like such good friends like you are not that many either.”

Yang Fan said with a smile, “Indeed not that many.”

Liu FengGu also gave a long sigh and said, “Now I realize that becoming friends is indeed not an easy matter.”

Yang Fan said, “You should have anticipated it before.”

Liu FengGu said, “Oh?”

Yang Fan said, “Don't you understand what I am saying?”

Liu FengGu said, “Enlighten me please!”

Yang Fan said, “You are very well defended here. There are 36 secret mechanisms here inside and outside that can trap you, or make anyone who dares to approach here into some twisted bamboo strips. You will know their presence immediately.”

Liu FengGu said, “You have only miscalculated a point, altogether there are 49 secret mechanisms here.”

Yang Fan said, “If anyone wants to make you be responsible of anything, before they have entered this place, you would have flown far away.”

Liu FengGu said, “It is indeed not easy to find me.”

Yang Fan said, “Moreover, even if we can find you, it is not easy to prove that you have injured anyone. You certainly will not admit easily that you have killed the meddlesome monk.”

Liu FengGu said, "Therefore you have used this method, by bringing them here?"

Yang Fan said, "I let Tian SiSi come inside first, because I wanted you to cope with her, and I did not want you to be suspicious about our plan."

Liu FengGu said, "Therefore you have concealed the truth from her?"

Yang Fan said, "Because she is not a person who can lie easily, if she had known this secret, you would have certainly seen the flaw immediately."

Liu FengGu sighed gently and said, "But if it had been me, I would not have allowed her to get worried, it seems that you have not truly understood how to show some tender affection."

Yang Fan said, "But I actually understood how to make a dishonest person tell the truth."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Yang Fan said, "I only use this method so you can tell the truth in front of Master Wu Se, because this matter is indeed a flawless crime. If you had not confessed personally, it is almost impossible to cleanse Qin Ge from these unjust accusations."

Liu FengGu nodded slowly and said, "You have done very well, indeed too well."

Yang Fan said, "Do you also admire me very much?"

Liu FengGu said, "I always think of you very highly, I have always considered you as my good friend, I did not expect that you"

He gave a long sigh with a painful expression in his face as if he could not see the justification of this betrayal.

Yang Fan actually smiled and said, "You have always regarded me as your friend?"

Liu FengGu said, "You did not understand me then?"

Yang Fan said, "I certainly understood you, moreover I understood you too well."

Liu FengGu said, "Oh?"

Yang Fan said, "Do you know why I was prepared for you?"

Liu FengGu said, "I only know that since the first day, I have always been a friend for you. It is you who wants to deal with me, I have never thought of how to cope with you."

Yang Fan said, "Therefore you still have not understood."

Liu FengGu said, "Which part I still have not understood?"

Yang Fan said, "It is you who wanted to cope with me first, therefore I have to prepare for you."

Liu FengGu said, "When have I tried to cope with you?"

Yang Fan said, "Since a while ago."

He did not let Liu FengGu interrupt him, "Let me ask you, why did you want to get Tian's family property, what is it for? "

Liu FengGu said, "Because I need the money."

Yang Fan said, "Why do you need so much money suddenly?"

Liu FengGu said, "Because I must achieve a great accomplishment, achieving a great accomplishment always needs a lot of money."

Yang Fan said, "What is this important matter?"

Liu FengGu's eyes flashed, he hesitatingly said, "Have you already known this matter?"

Yang Fan said, "I only knew that there was a secret organization called 'Qi Hai' (the seven seas) in jiang-hu."

Liu FengGu said, "What did you also know?"

Yang Fan said, "I also knew that this organization was trying to cope with 'Shan Liu'. Because this organization's leader has been doing a lot of shameful business in secret, he wanted to have 'Shan Liu' destroyed. "

He smiled, also said, "I certainly also knew that this organization's leader is you."

Liu FengGu's complexion seemed to change a little, after staring at him for a very long time, he said slowly, "What is your relationship with this matter?"

Yang Fan said, "I am related to this matter. It is a very important relationship."

Liu FengGu said, "YouYou are a 'Shan Liu''s person? "

Qin Ge also smiled suddenly, he interrupted, "If he does not exist, how can there be 'Shan Liu'? "

Liu FengGu seemed to have been whipped by someone, even after a while, he still could not say anything.

He sighed deeply, and with a forced smile he said, "I never knew who 'Shan Liu's leader was. I was always looking for him, it turned out that he was with me everyday."

Yang Fan said with a smile, "If you really considered me as your friend, why didn't you want me in your organization?"

Liu FengGu said, "Because of"

Yang Fan had interrupted him, "If you cannot say it, let me say it for you. Because once this matter is settled, you will no longer let me live?"

He then said lightly, "Such a secret organization like 'Qi Hai' certainly will not need a person who will die shortly."

Liu FengGu said, "What I wanted you to do is not a bad thing, you have not suffered a loss."

Yang Fan said, "Oh?"

Liu FengGu said, "I wanted you to perform like a hero to rescue a beautiful woman, also I wanted you to ask the beautiful woman to be your wife, such a good deed, many people would willingly do that thing."

Yang Fan said, "But you have not looked for anyone else actually."

Liu FengGu said, "Right, that's because I thought highly of you, considered you as a friend, therefore I have not looked for anyone else."

Yang Fan said, "It is not the reason."

Liu FengGu said, "No?"

Yang Fan said, "You wanted me, because nobody else looked more like Yang Fan than me, you already tried to find such a person."

Liu FengGu said, "Why?"

Yang Fan said, "Because you wanted me to pretend to be Yang Fan to produce a fraudulent marriage in Tian's family."

Liu FengGu said, "Woulnd't I fear that someone might have revealed this fraud?"

Yang Fan said, "Nobody could reveal this. The Second Master Yang has lost his sight and his hearing. Only because he has many enemies that this matter has been hidden from the public, so only very few people know about this."

Liu FengGu hesitatingly said, "But some people have seen him in recent times."

Yang Fan said, "That is only the substitute for second masterYang."

Liu FengGu said, "Substitute?"

Yang Fan said, "Because the second master Yang is not willing to let people in jiang-hu to know that he is already disabled, therefore he found a substitute person who takes a walk in jiang-hu twice a year."

Liu FengGu said, "Can't this substitute person also distinguish clearly between the genuine and the fake Yang Fan?"

Yang Fan said, "He seldom saw Yang Fan's face."

Liu FengGu said, "Second Master Tian?"

Yang Fan said, "Second Master Tian has not seen Yang Fan in the last few years."

Liu FengGu said, "What if the real Yang Fan has come back?"

Yang Fan said, "He has been missing for 3-4 years, some people have said that he has already become a monk, also some people have said that he has already died, you calculated that he would not appear suddenly."

Liu FengGu said, "His friends?"

Yang Fan said, "His temperament was a little strange originally, very few people were close to him, their temperament were even stranger than him, you certainly also calculated that these people would not come to drink the celebration drink."

He smiled and also said, "Moreover, even if Yang Fan and his friends suddenly appear, you certainly have your own method to cope with them, the method that will make them simply disappear."

Liu FengGu was silent as if tacitly approving.

Yang Fan said again, "This matter had been planned very well, who knew that something had changed in the meantime."

Liu FengGu said, "What had changed?"

Yang Fan said, "The change occurred to Second Master Tian."

Liu FengGu frowned and said, "You knew that he has already died?"

Yang Fan said, "I have my suspicion, but it was not confirmed until tonight."

Liu FengGu said, "How did you confirm it?"

Yang Fan smiled, "Is it possible that you have already forgotten that Madam Wang has a carefree younger sister who is more straightforward than a man?" (ed. He meant Wang SanNiang.)

Liu FengGu said, "You have seen her?"

Yang Fan nodded and said, "You have hidden this important news from me. Because Second Master Tian has already died, you do not need me anymore and you are ready to kick me away."

Liu FengGu looked at him, and after a very long silence, he gave a long sigh and said, "This very complex matter, unexpectedly you know everything so clearly."

Yang Fan said, "Indeed I know this very clearly."

Liu FengGu said, "But you should not have known some of these matters."

Yang Fan said, "Can't you guess why I would know them?"

Liu FengGu smiled forcedly and said, "I really cannot find out."

Yang Fan smiled and said, "That's because you don't know about one matter and this matter is the biggest key."

Liu FengGu said, "What is it?"

Yang Fan suddenly said, "Yang Fan is originally myself, I am originally Yang Fan."

He smiled and continued, "You never realized that the fake Yang Fan is also the real Yang Fan."

Liu FengGu was really stunned at last.

Yang Fan said, "These years I have been suddenly missing, that was not to be a monk, nor have I died. But 'Shan Liu' requires so many things to do, therefore I have not made any appearance in jiang-hu."

Liu FengGu's complexion became very pale.

Yang Fan turned around to Qin Ge and said, "This matter was very complex, perhaps you were not that clear about this until now. "

Qin Ge sighed, with a forced smile he said, "Sincerely speaking, I still do not understand most of it."

Yang Fan said, "Didn't I explain everything in such detail?"

Qin Ge said, "Although you have said it, I cannot remember everything actually."

He looked carelessly at Yang Fan's head, and said with a smile, "I also do not have such a big head, how can I remember such small details?"

Yang Fan had also smiled and said, "Actually when you think again everything carefully, you would realize that everything was not without its reasons, everything is very logical."

Qin Ge said, "Very logical?"

Yang Fan said, "Although there are many clues in this matter, but there is only one ultimate outcome, the one that had been doomed from the start."

Qin Ge said, "What is already doomed?"

Yang Fan had not directly responded and instead turned to Liu FengGu, "No one would buy a coffin without any reason, right?"

Liu FengGu nodded. He had no alternative but to acknowledge, if nobody died, nobody needed to go buy a coffin.

Yang Fan said, "You did not know that Master Wu Se and Qin Ge would be here?"

Liu FengGu said, "I did not know."

Yang Fan said, "Therefore this coffin was originally prepared for me, right?"

Liu FengGu said, "This coffin is not bad."

Yang Fan said, "If there is no one dead, the coffin is not needed, if there is a coffin, then there has to be a dead person."

Liu FengGu looked at Qin Ge and Master Wu Se, he finally nodded slowly and said, "I have finally understood what you are trying to say."

Yang Fan said, "Therefore I also do not need to say anything anymoreexcept one thing"

Liu FengGu said, "What is it?"

Yang Fan said, "To ask the gentleman to enter the coffin."

Chapter 32: Great People

One

“How long has Liu FengGu died?”

“Nine months.”

“Nine months are not that long, sometimes they pass by like the twinkle of an eye, but these nine months were actually really long.”

“That is only because your heart feels very stuffy.”

“If not for me being so absurd, father would not have died so quickly!”

“Now that you have already grown up, why do you still harbor this childish idea?”

“How should I think then?”

“That you have treated everyone fairly, so you should not feel sorry for yourself, this should be enough.”

“But I

“You should go out for a walk, look around, listen, then your heart can become open and bright.”

“Where do you want me to go?”

“Chiangnan —haven’t you always been thinking of going to Chiangnan?”

Two

Chiangnan.

Chiangnan was thick with spring.
The road was lined with green jade willow tree,
underneath the blue sky.

Tian SiSi was holding on Yang Fan's hand, strolling on the road.

Qin Ge and Tian Xin walked in front of them, the bright red silk handkerchief fluttered upwards in the spring breeze.

The fluttering red silk handkerchief was stroking Tian Xin's face lightly.

Tian SiSi smiled suddenly and said, "This little rascal has finally grown up, not so long ago I still thought that she would never grow up."

Yang Fan was smiling and said, "You have also grown up, I thought I would never see you grow up as well."

A person who had undergone hardship and tribulation was the one who could truly understand the meaning of life, who could truly grow up.

Tian SiSi indeed had grown up.

She looked a bit more quiet and also more beautiful.

Yang Fan was pondering and said slowly, "Tian Xin is really a very faithful friend, for you, she could do almost anything. If she were not willing to take the risk, perhaps Liu FengGu could not have been deceived that easily."

Tian SiSi said, "She even had me deceived."

Yang Fan said, "I always thought that we should find a way to thank her."

Tian SiSi said, "How should we say thank you?"

Yang Fan looked at that fluttering red silk handkerchief and said softly with a smile, "We should submit her a red silk

handkerchief.”

Tian SiSi had also smiled, smiled really sweetly.

Only a woman who had obtained love and happiness could smile so sweetly.

Out on the road, the attractively dressed boys and girls formed the pairs.

Spring originally belonged to the sweethearts.

Now was precisely spring.

Tian SiSi looked at these people and only hoped that everyone had similar happiness and joy like her.

Suddenly, someone was shouting, “Hero Yue is seen in the lake, it is hero Yue whose prestige shakes the world.”

The crowd ran over to the lake ashore, everybody wanted to see the famous hero.

Yang Fan suddenly also said with a smile, “Are you also going to have a look?”

Tian SiSi blinked and said, “Whom do I want to look at?”

Yang Fan said, “Yue HuanShan, isn’t he also one of the great persons in your mind?”

Tian SiSi said, “But I actually no longer want to look at him!”

Yang Fan said, “Why?”

Tian SiSi lifted her eyes, stared at him, and gave him a glance as gentle as the spring water. She said gently,

“Because I have found a genuinely great person. In my heart, there is none other bigger than him.”

Yang Fan intentionally blinked and said, “Who is this person?”

Tian SiSi smiled and whispered gently into his ear, “It is you, the big-headed ghost.”

T H E E N D

About the Author: Gu Long



Taken from: <http://koolung.tripod.com/earlydays.html>

The Early Days

Xiong Yaohua [Hung Yiu-Wah], better known by his pen name Gu Long (1937-1985), is the most popular martial arts novelist in Taiwan. Originated from Jiangxi but born in Hong Kong, his family settled in Taiwan when he was 13.

During his early years he lived in Ruifang, an ancient suburban town of Tai-pei, and attended a prestigious university. He would always have a book with him at school, but they were only leisure books.

He particularly favoured European and American novels, from which he adopted the Western writing style, thus securing a foundation for his martial arts novels.

After graduation, many students entered the academic field, except Gu Long. Even in his juvenile years he was quite a rebellious individual who did not feel the hurry to seek employment.

Instead he returned to his small town to write manuscripts, living a quiet life just like Tao Yuanming [Han poet]. In fact, he did not seek employment straight after graduation, not because he was lazy, but because he devoted all his time and energy to his life's target: writing literature.

Gu Long began to write novels at the young age of 11, 12, and received his first manuscript royalty at age 19. The main subject of his novels and literary prose was love, but he was unable to make a name of himself until his friends encouraged him to write martial arts novels.

The love relationships in those novels were strikingly true to life, maybe an effect from his many years of writing love stories.

Writing Career

It was in the early 60s when Gu long, aged 23, truly concentrated on writing martial arts novels. Martial arts novelists were extremely popular in Hong Kong and Taiwan at that time so it was a highly competitive genre to write for.

There were about 100 martial arts novelists to meet the demands of the large number of martial arts readers. Despite this, Gu Long made use of his great mind and occupied himself with writing.

Together with Zhu Qingyun [Got Ching-Wan], Wo Longsheng [Ngo Lung-Sang] and Si Maling [Si Ma-Ling], they were the four great martial arts novelists. Gu Long had rather an odd personality, he was only willing to talk to those he knew well.

Even so, he needed to have alcohol in his hand to find enjoyment. Gu Long's reputation in the publishing circle was bad; he would always ask for high advanced royalties and then fail to complete his manuscripts on time.

However, publishers were willing to be deceived by Gu Long time after time, because they were afraid of losing this Golden Goose. Gu Long had a habit of manicuring his nails before writing. A good friend of his explained that Gu Long actually used that time to construct the story plot.

Sometimes he would not write on a table, instead he'd sit on the floor and rest on a black board. He believed that this allowed inspiration to rush into him.

He was also an excessive smoker, consuming an average of two packets on a simple night of drafting.

Life At Home

Gu Long's dress sense was as hassle-free as his writing. He'd choose to wear a suit without the tie and considering comfort rather than quality. He did not dress for anybody, but for his own comfort only. Gu Long was at his freest wandering around topless at home.

Talking of which, one must mention his house. When he lived in Ruifang his house was very simple, but after he became famous, it all turned luxurious. He bought two flats in Tai-pei, one for his family and one as his creative space.

The smartest room had to be his study, which boasted an advanced music, home entertainment and games system, where he also played darts.

Covering all four rooms of his study were the works of famous people, all dedicated to this great brother of theirs, Gu Long. Despite owning such an enviously luxurious house, Gu Long rarely spent time there.

As soon as he finished his manuscripts he'd abandon his pen then go out and seek pleasure. He'd frequently stay in hotels, not returning home for days on end.

There was nothing his wife at that time could do though. She knew that Gu Long would eventually come home when he'd had enough.

Love Life

Gu Long's state of perfection consists of a pen, alcohol and beautiful women. He was married twice but both marriages ended up in divorce, bringing him three sons and a deep scar in his heart.

It could be said that over half the problems in his love life were caused by his dissipated nature. His student, Ding Qing, once bluntly said, it is in Gu daxia's (dai hap) nature to be a prodigal, therefore he is unsuitable for a marriage life.

Although Gu Long wrecked two marriages, he was never short of beautiful women.

The literary world at the time was curious to know how such a plain-looking man could attract so many beautiful women.

Some say it's because of his riches, but Ding Qing, who knew him well, said, Gu daxia's charisma is in his loneliness-that's what attracts the beautiful women.

The women who were well acquainted with Gu Long understood that he was a lonely man who pursued novelty because of his lonely heart. As a result, he had loved many women, but almost none of them were long-term relationships.

Although Gu Long could not be without female companions, he'd frequently abandon his loved ones to be with his friends.

He could always find another women, but a good friend is hard to find, and it was this attitude that provoked hatred towards him from many of those women, who also accused him of not taking life seriously.

Eventually two women divorced him and the remainder of the women who were once close to him ended up unwilling to forgive his cold-heartedness.

One of Gu Long's biggest weaknesses his life was his love for alcohol. Although he enjoyed having fun in some sexually charged places [I could not think of a more appropriate word for fung yuet cheung sor, he had never forced a women into anything they were unwilling to do.

He had once advised Ding Qing, go home, you little bastard [doesn't sound as harsh in Chinese], XX treats you well, you shouldn't wrong her.

Gu Long understood that it was difficult to change his own ways, and he didn't want others to be like him. He also knew that he owed too many love debts.

Friends

Ding Qing was not only Gu Long's student, they were also congenial companions. Ding Qing had once written in his memorial piece called "Me and Gu Long", how his once rebellious, loose character whom everyone cold-shouldered was welcomed with open arms by Gu Long.

He guided Ding Qing onto the right path in life; taught him the ways of life, how to write creatively and even taught him how to conduct oneself.

This close teacher-student relationship was indeed rare in this world. He infected Ding Qing with a great part of himself. They would often go out drinking and discuss martial arts together.

It was only during those times that Ding Qing really understood Gu Long's character. He understood that Gu Long was not a cold-hearted person, and that Gu Long does

not favour superficial and material happiness, as it was the intense, deep-hearted happiness that he pursued.

Despite having negativity that people criticised about, he was still a righteous, chivalrous swordsman, who walked the earth with only a sword in hand but his sword has never hurt anyone. Gu Long's friends come from all walks of life. He did not choose friends by their reputation or status.

Be they guest poets or pawnbrokers, they're all equal in Gu Long's eyes. He would often have gatherings at home, with guests such as editors (publishing), authors, directors (motion picture), stars and also chivalrous underworld guests and martial arts experts. They would drink and play word games for entertainment.

He had a few other good friends other than Ding Qing, Jin Yong and Ngai Hong are two friends Gu Long admitted to having. Once when they were having a drink together, Gu Long came up with the first half of a couplet, but he couldn't think of the last half and asked Jin Yong and Ngai Hong to complete it.

Both couldn't either and after much thought Jin Yong said, this couplet is nonsense! They laughed and then made a pact that whoever could complete the couplet would receive a signed book from the other two.

This episode was mentioned in the annotation of one of his novels, which included his views on his two friends. He described Jin Yong as a deep thinker of wisdom, and Ngai Hong as a quick-witted genius.

He even humorously added that his characters Ximen Chuixue [Sai-Mun Chui-Suet] and Lu Xiaofeng [Luk Siu-Fung] are well known, but Jin Yong and Ngai Hong are even more popular amongst contemporary readers.

Gu Long and Jin Yong had regular written contacts where they would discuss swordsmanship and martial arts. He describes Jin Yong as a well-versed novelist.

Extravagance

Ding Qing was not only Gu Long's student, they were also congenial companions. Ding Qing had once written in his memorial piece called "Me and Gu Long", how his once rebellious, loose character whom everyone cold-shouldered was welcomed with open arms by Gu Long.

He guided Ding Qing onto the right path in life; taught him the ways of life, how to write creatively and even taught him how to conduct oneself.

This close teacher-student relationship was indeed rare in this world. He infected Ding Qing with a great part of himself. They would often go out drinking and discuss martial arts together.

It was only during those times that Ding Qing really understood Gu Long's character. He understood that Gu Long was not a cold-hearted person, and that Gu Long does not favour superficial and material happiness, as it was the intense, deep-hearted happiness that he pursued.

Despite having negativity that people criticised about, he was still a righteous, chivalrous swordsman, who walked the earth with only a sword in hand but his sword has never hurt anyone. Gu Long's friends come from all walks of life. He did not choose friends by their reputation or status.

Be they guest poets or pawnbrokers, they're all equal in Gu Long's eyes. He would often have gatherings at home, with guests such as editors (publishing), authors, directors (motion picture), stars and also chivalrous underworld

guests and martial arts experts. They would drink and play word games for entertainment.

He had a few other good friends other than Ding Qing, Jin Yong and Ngai Hong are two friends Gu Long admitted to having. Once when they were having a drink together, Gu Long came up with the first half of a couplet, but he couldn't think of the last half and asked Jin Yong and Ngai Hong to complete it.

Both couldn't either and after much thought Jin Yong said, this couplet is nonsense! They laughed and then made a pact that whoever could complete the couplet would receive a signed book from the other two.

This episode was mentioned in the annotation of one his novels, which included his views on his two friends. He described Jin Yong as a deep thinker of wisdom, and Ngai Hong as a quick-witted genius.

He even humorously added that his characters Ximen Chuixue [Sai-Mun Chui-Suet] and Lu Xiaofeng [Luk Siu-Fung] are well known, but Jin Yong and Ngai Hong are even more popular amongst contemporary readers.

Gu Long and Jin Yong had regular written contacts where they would discuss swordsmanship and martial arts. He describes Jin Yong as a well-versed novelist.

Short Life

Gu Long became famous at an early age, but he also died at an early age on 21/09/85 at the age of 48. The cause of his death? Alcohol. Gu Long could not enjoy himself without alcohol.

The contents of his glass were his companion, through his highs and lows - but were also the cause of his damaged liver.

The middle-aged Gu Long lacked health, due to overwork and his whimsical character; when things weren't running smoothly he'd drink to ease his sorrows.

His long-term alcoholic lifestyle eventually caused his robust body to collapse with hepatocirrhosis [hardening of the liver] of an advanced stage. With the encouragement of friends, Gu Long stayed in hospital, managed to change his eating habits and was even alcohol-free for a year.

When others drank alcohol he'd drink tea, talking cheerfully and humorously. However, a leopard cannot change its spots; as soon as Gu Long recovered he was back to his old ways, starting modestly then gradually increasing his drinking quantity.

He again ended up in hospital with a dormant liver. He gained consciousness after a few days of emergency treatment. The sweet and virtuous nurse who took care of him cried tears of joy when she saw him open his eyes and smile. And so he had another month's stay in hospital.

Before he left, he asked the doctor, could I drink alcohol after I leave? in which the doctor replied, best not to, but a modest glass a day would not do any harm. However as soon as he left the hospital, he began to drink a minimum of seven to eight small glasses daily, acting in disregard of others' opinion.

He'd use his mad drinking to fight death; to kill the lonely times and to while away his limited years. Once again he was admitted to hospital, even the surprised nurses exclaimed, how brave of you, Gu Daxia, to be in hospital again!

This time his excessive drinking caused a gullet rupture. After the haemorrhage he continued his heroic ways, which had not mellowed whatsoever.

When Ding Qing was by his sickbed one silent night, Gu Long suddenly asked, little cuckold [does not sound as harsh in Chinese], do you think anyone would cry for me when I die? His words sounded a touch desolated, but he was soon laughing and joking.

Those around him believed that Gu Long won't just leave the world like that; who'd guessed that that was a brief glow of light just before his death.

Gu Long fell into another coma on 21/09/85, and his last words were: "Why haven't any of my girlfriends been to visit me?."

It was that night at 6.06pm that Gu Long ended his life journey, leaving the literary circle and this world forever. People from all walks of life especially those who were fond of martial arts novels were extremely shocked when the news of Gu Long's death spread. At his funeral, close friends choked with tears, sat in front of the bier stamping their feet and banging their heads against the wall all in grief and disbelief.

However, almost none of his relatives, including his divorcees, whom he was once close to, showed up. Probably another of Gu Long's biggest regrets in life were his sons, none of whom bore his name: the eldest was in Tai-pei, second in America and his youngest son was only 9 at the time.

Ngai Hong wrote an obituary by his bier, an extract from it read, Gu Long is longer with us, but he'll always be in our hearts. An extract from Taiwanese writer, Qiao Qi's, elegiac

poem read, Xiao Li Fei Dao [Siu Lei Fei Toh] has become a lost classic and the world has lost their Chu Liuxiang [Chor Lau-Heung].

Once the Hong Kong and Taiwanese press reported the news of Gu Long's death by the drink and published pictures of him, many professionals wrote pieces to express their regrets.

Ngai Hong said, people used Jin Yong as a role model before the arrival of Gu Long's novels. Only Gu Long could break through Jin Yong's model and establish a new style.

People in the TV and film industry commended Gu Long works as a break-through in the history of martial arts novels. They also made a fair comment on how Gu Long had a strict attitude towards his later works, to fulfill his creative goal to hold a little responsibility towards society.

Gu Long now rests in Tai-peí. At his burial his friends placed 48 opened bottled of Hennessy XO brandy in his coffin, to allow the addicted Gu Long to be intoxicated by the rich fragrance - even in his long sleep.

Gu Long is not dead, because his work will continue to be with us, especially his creative practice that has left us with a new irradiation and a new way of thinking.

License

<http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc/3.0/us/>

License

THE WORK (AS DEFINED BELOW) IS PROVIDED UNDER THE TERMS OF THIS CREATIVE COMMONS PUBLIC LICENSE ("CCPL" OR "LICENSE"). THE WORK IS PROTECTED BY COPYRIGHT AND/OR OTHER APPLICABLE LAW. ANY USE OF THE WORK OTHER THAN AS AUTHORIZED UNDER THIS LICENSE OR COPYRIGHT LAW IS PROHIBITED.

BY EXERCISING ANY RIGHTS TO THE WORK PROVIDED HERE, YOU ACCEPT AND AGREE TO BE BOUND BY THE TERMS OF THIS LICENSE. TO THE EXTENT THIS LICENSE MAY BE CONSIDERED TO BE A CONTRACT, THE LICENSOR GRANTS YOU THE RIGHTS CONTAINED HERE IN CONSIDERATION OF YOUR ACCEPTANCE OF SUCH TERMS AND CONDITIONS.

1. Definitions

- a. **"Collective Work"** means a work, such as a periodical issue, anthology or encyclopedia, in which the Work in its entirety in unmodified form, along with one or more other contributions, constituting separate and independent works in themselves, are assembled into a collective whole. A work that constitutes a Collective Work will not be considered a Derivative Work (as defined below) for the purposes of this License.
- b. **"Derivative Work"** means a work based upon the Work or upon the Work and other pre-existing works, such as a translation, musical arrangement, dramatization, fictionalization, motion picture version, sound recording, art reproduction,

abridgment, condensation, or any other form in which the Work may be recast, transformed, or adapted, except that a work that constitutes a Collective Work will not be considered a Derivative Work for the purpose of this License. For the avoidance of doubt, where the Work is a musical composition or sound recording, the synchronization of the Work in timed-relation with a moving image ("synching") will be considered a Derivative Work for the purpose of this License.

- c. **"Licensor"** means the individual, individuals, entity or entities that offers the Work under the terms of this License.
- d. **"Original Author"** means the individual, individuals, entity or entities who created the Work.
- e. **"Work"** means the copyrightable work of authorship offered under the terms of this License.
- f. **"You"** means an individual or entity exercising rights under this License who has not previously violated the terms of this License with respect to the Work, or who has received express permission from the Licensor to exercise rights under this License despite a previous violation.

2. Fair Use Rights. Nothing in this license is intended to reduce, limit, or restrict any rights arising from fair use, first sale or other limitations on the exclusive rights of the copyright owner under copyright law or other applicable laws.

3. License Grant. Subject to the terms and conditions of this License, Licensor hereby grants You a worldwide, royalty-free, non-exclusive, perpetual (for the duration of the applicable copyright) license to exercise the rights in the Work as stated below:

- a. to reproduce the Work, to incorporate the Work into one or more Collective Works, and to reproduce the Work as incorporated in the Collective Works;
- b. to create and reproduce Derivative Works provided that any such Derivative Work, including any translation in any medium, takes reasonable steps to clearly label, demarcate or otherwise identify that changes were made to the original Work. For example, a translation could be marked "The original work was translated from English to Spanish," or a modification could indicate "The original work has been modified.";
- c. to distribute copies or phonorecords of, display publicly, perform publicly, and perform publicly by means of a digital audio transmission the Work including as incorporated in Collective Works;
- d. to distribute copies or phonorecords of, display publicly, perform publicly, and perform publicly by means of a digital audio transmission Derivative Works;

The above rights may be exercised in all media and formats whether now known or hereafter devised. The above rights include the right to make such modifications as are technically necessary to exercise the rights in other media and formats. All rights not expressly granted by Licensor are hereby reserved, including but not limited to the rights set forth in Sections 4(d) and 4(e).

4. Restrictions. The license granted in Section 3 above is expressly made subject to and limited by the following restrictions:

- a. You may distribute, publicly display, publicly perform, or publicly digitally perform the Work only under the terms of this License, and You must

include a copy of, or the Uniform Resource Identifier for, this License with every copy or phonorecord of the Work You distribute, publicly display, publicly perform, or publicly digitally perform. You may not offer or impose any terms on the Work that restrict the terms of this License or the ability of a recipient of the Work to exercise the rights granted to that recipient under the terms of the License. You may not sublicense the Work. You must keep intact all notices that refer to this License and to the disclaimer of warranties. When You distribute, publicly display, publicly perform, or publicly digitally perform the Work, You may not impose any technological measures on the Work that restrict the ability of a recipient of the Work from You to exercise the rights granted to that recipient under the terms of the License. This Section 4(a) applies to the Work as incorporated in a Collective Work, but this does not require the Collective Work apart from the Work itself to be made subject to the terms of this License. If You create a Collective Work, upon notice from any Licensor You must, to the extent practicable, remove from the Collective Work any credit as required by Section 4(c), as requested. If You create a Derivative Work, upon notice from any Licensor You must, to the extent practicable, remove from the Derivative Work any credit as required by Section 4(c), as requested.

- b. You may not exercise any of the rights granted to You in Section 3 above in any manner that is primarily intended for or directed toward commercial advantage or private monetary compensation. The exchange of the Work for other copyrighted works by means of digital file-sharing or otherwise shall not be considered to be intended

for or directed toward commercial advantage or private monetary compensation, provided there is no payment of any monetary compensation in connection with the exchange of copyrighted works.

- c. If You distribute, publicly display, publicly perform, or publicly digitally perform the Work (as defined in Section 1 above) or any Derivative Works (as defined in Section 1 above) or Collective Works (as defined in Section 1 above), You must, unless a request has been made pursuant to Section 4(a), keep intact all copyright notices for the Work and provide, reasonable to the medium or means You are utilizing: (i) the name of the Original Author (or pseudonym, if applicable) if supplied, and/or (ii) if the Original Author and/or Licensor designate another party or parties (e.g. a sponsor institute, publishing entity, journal) for attribution ("Attribution Parties") in Licensor's copyright notice, terms of service or by other reasonable means, the name of such party or parties; the title of the Work if supplied; to the extent reasonably practicable, the Uniform Resource Identifier, if any, that Licensor specifies to be associated with the Work, unless such URI does not refer to the copyright notice or licensing information for the Work; and, consistent with Section 3(b) in the case of a Derivative Work, a credit identifying the use of the Work in the Derivative Work (e.g., "French translation of the Work by Original Author," or "Screenplay based on original Work by Original Author"). The credit required by this Section 4(c) may be implemented in any reasonable manner; provided, however, that in the case of a Derivative Work or Collective Work, at a minimum such credit will appear, if a credit for

all contributing authors of the Derivative Work or Collective Work appears, then as part of these credits and in a manner at least as prominent as the credits for the other contributing authors. For the avoidance of doubt, You may only use the credit required by this Section for the purpose of attribution in the manner set out above and, by exercising Your rights under this License, You may not implicitly or explicitly assert or imply any connection with, sponsorship or endorsement by the Original Author, Licensor and/or Attribution Parties, as appropriate, of You or Your use of the Work, without the separate, express prior written permission of the Original Author, Licensor and/or Attribution Parties.

- d. For the avoidance of doubt, where the Work is a musical composition:
 - i. **Performance Royalties Under Blanket Licenses.** Licensor reserves the exclusive right to collect whether individually or, in the event that Licensor is a member of a performance rights society (e.g. ASCAP, BMI, SESAC), via that society, royalties for the public performance or public digital performance (e.g. webcast) of the Work if that performance is primarily intended for or directed toward commercial advantage or private monetary compensation.
 - ii. **Mechanical Rights and Statutory Royalties.** Licensor reserves the exclusive right to collect, whether individually or via a music rights agency or designated agent (e.g. Harry Fox Agency), royalties for any phonorecord You create from the Work ("cover

version") and distribute, subject to the compulsory license created by 17 USC Section 115 of the US Copyright Act (or the equivalent in other jurisdictions), if Your distribution of such cover version is primarily intended for or directed toward commercial advantage or private monetary compensation.

e. Webcasting Rights and Statutory Royalties.

For the avoidance of doubt, where the Work is a sound recording, Licensor reserves the exclusive right to collect, whether individually or via a performance-rights society (e.g. SoundExchange), royalties for the public digital performance (e.g. webcast) of the Work, subject to the compulsory license created by 17 USC Section 114 of the US Copyright Act (or the equivalent in other jurisdictions), if Your public digital performance is primarily intended for or directed toward commercial advantage or private monetary compensation.

5. Representations, Warranties and Disclaimer

UNLESS OTHERWISE MUTUALLY AGREED TO BY THE PARTIES IN WRITING, LICENSOR OFFERS THE WORK AS-IS AND ONLY TO THE EXTENT OF ANY RIGHTS HELD IN THE LICENSED WORK BY THE LICENSOR. THE LICENSOR MAKES NO REPRESENTATIONS OR WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND CONCERNING THE WORK, EXPRESS, IMPLIED, STATUTORY OR OTHERWISE, INCLUDING, WITHOUT LIMITATION, WARRANTIES OF TITLE, MARKETABILITY, MERCHANTABILITY, FITNESS FOR A PARTICULAR PURPOSE, NONINFRINGEMENT, OR THE ABSENCE OF LATENT OR OTHER DEFECTS, ACCURACY, OR THE PRESENCE OF ABSENCE OF ERRORS, WHETHER OR NOT DISCOVERABLE. SOME

JURISDICTIONS DO NOT ALLOW THE EXCLUSION OF IMPLIED WARRANTIES, SO SUCH EXCLUSION MAY NOT APPLY TO YOU.

6. Limitation on Liability. EXCEPT TO THE EXTENT REQUIRED BY APPLICABLE LAW, IN NO EVENT WILL LICENSOR BE LIABLE TO YOU ON ANY LEGAL THEORY FOR ANY SPECIAL, INCIDENTAL, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR EXEMPLARY DAMAGES ARISING OUT OF THIS LICENSE OR THE USE OF THE WORK, EVEN IF LICENSOR HAS BEEN ADVISED OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGES.

7. Termination

- a. This License and the rights granted hereunder will terminate automatically upon any breach by You of the terms of this License. Individuals or entities who have received Derivative Works (as defined in Section 1 above) or Collective Works (as defined in Section 1 above) from You under this License, however, will not have their licenses terminated provided such individuals or entities remain in full compliance with those licenses. Sections 1, 2, 5, 6, 7, and 8 will survive any termination of this License.
- b. Subject to the above terms and conditions, the license granted here is perpetual (for the duration of the applicable copyright in the Work). Notwithstanding the above, Licensor reserves the right to release the Work under different license terms or to stop distributing the Work at any time; provided, however that any such election will not serve to withdraw this License (or any other license that has been, or is required to be, granted under the terms of this License), and this License will continue in full force and effect unless terminated as stated above.

8. Miscellaneous

- a. Each time You distribute or publicly digitally perform the Work (as defined in Section 1 above) or a Collective Work (as defined in Section 1 above), the Licensor offers to the recipient a license to the Work on the same terms and conditions as the license granted to You under this License.
- b. Each time You distribute or publicly digitally perform a Derivative Work, Licensor offers to the recipient a license to the original Work on the same terms and conditions as the license granted to You under this License.
- c. If any provision of this License is invalid or unenforceable under applicable law, it shall not affect the validity or enforceability of the remainder of the terms of this License, and without further action by the parties to this agreement, such provision shall be reformed to the minimum extent necessary to make such provision valid and enforceable.
- d. No term or provision of this License shall be deemed waived and no breach consented to unless such waiver or consent shall be in writing and signed by the party to be charged with such waiver or consent.
- e. This License constitutes the entire agreement between the parties with respect to the Work licensed here. There are no understandings, agreements or representations with respect to the Work not specified here. Licensor shall not be bound by any additional provisions that may appear in any communication from You. This

License may not be modified without the mutual written agreement of the Licensor and You.

Creative Commons Notice

Creative Commons is not a party to this License, and makes no warranty whatsoever in connection with the Work. Creative Commons will not be liable to You or any party on any legal theory for any damages whatsoever, including without limitation any general, special, incidental or consequential damages arising in connection to this license. Notwithstanding the foregoing two (2) sentences, if Creative Commons has expressly identified itself as the Licensor hereunder, it shall have all rights and obligations of Licensor.

Except for the limited purpose of indicating to the public that the Work is licensed under the CCPL, Creative Commons does not authorize the use by either party of the trademark "Creative Commons" or any related trademark or logo of Creative Commons without the prior written consent of Creative Commons. Any permitted use will be in compliance with Creative Commons' then-current trademark usage guidelines, as may be published on its website or otherwise made available upon request from time to time. For the avoidance of doubt, this trademark restriction does not form part of the License.

Creative Commons may be contacted at <http://creativecommons.org/>.